# M-theory on $G_{2}$ Manifolds Moduli to Phenomenology 

by

Khoa Dang Nguyen

# A dissertation submitted in partial fulfillment of the requirements for the degree of Doctor of Philosophy <br> (Applied and Interdisciplinary Mathematics ) in The University of Michigan 

2022

Doctoral Committee:
Professor Lizhen Ji (Co-Chair)
Professor Emeritus Gordon Kane (Co-Chair)
Professor Aaron Pierce
Professor Ralf Spatzier

Khoa Dang Nguyen
kdng@umich.edu
ORCID iD: 0000-0001-5839-9569
(C) Khoa Dang Nguyen 2022

All Rights Reserved

Luận án này xin được là lời cảm ơn dàng riêng cho ba mẹ, người đã toàn tâm cống hiến cuộc đời mình để nuôi lớn và ủng hộ con trở thành người như hôm nay.

Cũng là lời cảm ơn tới em gái, người luôn quan tâm anh hai những năm tháng xa nhà.

Cuối cùng là lời cảm ơn tới các giáo sư, bạn bè, đồng nghiệp, và tất cả mọi người đã giúp đỡ tôi vể cả tinh thần và trí thức.

This study is dedicated to my parents who have wholeheartedly devoted their life to raise and support me to become the person I am today.

To my sister who has always cared for me during all this time away from home.

And lastly, to my advisors, my friends, my colleagues, and all others who have been helping me intellectually and emotionally.

## ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

We would like to acknowledge the support from the LCTP and the Math department at the University of Michigan and DoE grant DE-SC0007859.

## TABLE OF CONTENTS

DEDICATION ..... ii
ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS ..... iii
LIST OF TABLES ..... ix
LIST OF FIGURES ..... x
ABSTRACT ..... xi
CHAPTER I: Introduction ..... 1
CHAPTER II: Math Background ..... 4
II.1: Holonomy ..... 4
II.2: Classification of Riemannian holonomy groups ..... 5
II.3: Calabi-Yau manifold ..... 7
II.3.1: Complex manifold ..... 7
II.3.2: Kähler manifold ..... 8
II.3.3: Calabi-Yau manifold. ..... 8
II.3.4: Hodge number ..... 8
II.3.5: Harmonic decomposition ..... 10
II.3.6: Calabi-Yau manifold - Basic geometry ..... 11
II.3.7: Special Lagrangian ..... 12
II.4: $G_{2}$ manifold ..... 13
II.4.1: overview and definitions ..... 13
II.4.2: Associative and coassociative cycles ..... 15
II.5: ADE singularity ..... 17
CHAPTER III: Physics Background ..... 21
III.1: Brief overview of the Standard Model ..... 21
III.2: String theories ..... 24
III.3: Type IIA on Calabi Yau ..... 27
III.4: Type IIB on Calabi Yau ..... 27
III.5: Duality between type II theories ..... 27
III.5.1: T-duality ..... 27
III.5.2: Mirror symmetry ..... 28
III.6: U-duality - M-theory and type IIA duality ..... 28
III.7: Nonabelian gauge theories in string theories ..... 30
III.7.1: Coincident D-branes in string theories. ..... 30
III.7.2: The extension to M-theory ..... 30
III.8: Heterotic string theories ..... 33
III.9: U duality - M-theory and heterotic string ..... 33
III.10: Other dualities ..... 34
III.11: Supergravity ..... 34
III.11.1: Supergravity - more details ..... 36
CHAPTER IV: M-Theory on $G_{2}$ Manifold with ADE Singularities ..... 39
IV.1: Kalazu-Klein reduction on $G_{2}$ manifold ..... 40
IV.2: M-theory on $G_{2}$ manifold with ADE singularities ..... 43
IV.3: Gauge group enhancement ..... 44
IV.3.1: Chiral Fermion ..... 47
IV.4: Yukawa couplings from instanton effect ..... 47
CHAPTER V: Moduli from Quark and Charged Lepton Masses in Lin- earized Model ..... 50
V.1: Local model ..... 51
V.2: $E_{8}$ Breaking ..... 52
V.2.1: Fermion Representations ..... 54
V.3: Yukawa Coupling from Volume of the Three-Cycle ..... 56
V.3.1: Discussion of Other Features ..... 59
V.4: Quark Terms ..... 59
V.4.1: General Quark Terms ..... 59
V.4.2: Diagonal Terms and Setting $a=0$ ..... 60
V.4.3: Quark Mass Matrices ..... 61
V.4.4: Six Higgs VEVs ..... 62
V.4.5: Toward Physical Coupling ..... 63
V.4.6: Higgs VEVs ..... 63
V.5: Yukawa matrix for gauge group $S U(3) \times S U(2) \times U(1)^{Y} \times U(1)^{b} \times U(1)^{c} \times U(1)^{d}$ ..... 64
V.6: Numerical Evaluation ..... 64
V.7: Effect of the Higgses and Yukawa couplings ..... 66
V.8: Anomalies ..... 67
V.8.1: How to Compute the Anomaly ..... 67
V.8.2: Anomaly Cancelation by Stückelberg-Green-Schwarz Mechanism ..... 67
V.9: Stabilization ..... 69
V.10: Flavor changing neutral current ..... 70
V.11: Conclusion ..... 73
CHAPTER VI: Neutrino Mass ..... 75
VI.1: Overview ..... 75
VI.2: Background ..... 77
VI.2.1: General setup ..... 77
VI.2.2: Yukawa couplings ..... 78
VI.3: Terms ..... 79
VI.3.1: Neutrino-neutrino mixing terms ..... 79
VI.3.2: Mixing Matter with Higgs Superfields ..... 80
VI.3.3: Mixing Matter with Gauginos ..... 81
VI.3.4: General Mass Matrix ..... 81
VI.4: Assumption about the texture of the mass matrix ..... 82
VI.4.1: Case A: $B^{2} \ll R M A$ ..... 83
VI.4.2: Case B: $B^{2} \gg R M A$ ..... 84
VI.4.3: Case C: $B^{2} \approx R M A$ ..... 84
VI.5: VEVs of right-handed neutrinos and their conjugates ..... 85
VI.5.1: Case 1: No Mixing ..... 85
VI.5.2: Case 2: Mixing with Two Families ..... 86
VI.5.3: Case 3: Mixing with Three Families ..... 87
VI.6: Mass Matrix from Neutrino Mixing (case A) ..... 87
VI.6.1: Mass Matrix Setup ..... 87
VI.7: Majorana Mass Matrix (case A) ..... 90
VI.7.1: Majorana Mass Matrix from See-Saw Mechanism ..... 90
VI.7.2: Majorana mass from VEVs of $\nu_{i}^{c}$ ..... 91
VI.8: Limit for Neutrinos (Case A) ..... 92
VI.8.1: Upper Bound for $\epsilon_{i}$ ..... 92
VI.8.2: Normal Hierarchy Analysis ..... 93
VI.8.3: Inverted Hierarchy Analysis ..... 95
VI.9: Heavy neutrino mass (Case A) ..... 96
VI.10: Analysis for case B ..... 97
VI.11: Conclusion ..... 98
CHAPTER VII: Summary and Future Directions ..... 100
VII.1: Summary ..... 100
VII.2: Future direction ..... 100
APPENDIX A: Moduli from quark mass matrices ..... 102
A.1: Yukawa Tables ..... 102
A.2: Table 10 in [38] ..... 107
BIBLIOGRAPHY ..... 108

## LIST OF TABLES

III. 1 SM fermions without conjugates where $Q_{i}$ 's are left-handed quarks, $u_{i}$ 's and $d_{i}$ 's are right-handed up-type (up, charm, top) and down-type (down, strange, bottom) quarks, $L_{i}$ 's are left-handed leptons, $e_{i}$ 's are charged right-haned leptons (electron, moun, tau). Notice that the right handed neutrinos $\nu_{i}$ are not here because we are not sure if they exist. If they do, they will transform in the $(\mathbf{1}, \mathbf{1})$ representation of $S U(3) \times S U(2)$ with 0 charge under $U(1)$. . 23
III. 2 Type IIA field content in 4d . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 27
III. 3 Type IIB field content in 4d . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 28
III. 4 M-theory to IIA by KK reduction on $S^{1}$. . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 29
III. 5 IIA and M-theory on $S^{1}$ duality . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 29
III. 6 Heterotic string theory 4d content . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 33
III. 7 Summary of $\mathcal{N}=1$ supergravity multiplet. This decomposition is discussed
more in Chapter IV. . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . . 37
V. 1 Positive roots of $E_{n}$ and the associated one-forms (sometimes called "area" in literature) controlling the sizes of 2 -cycles on the ALE fiber. This is Table 1 in [37] with permission.52
V. 2 Relevant particles from three families of $E_{6}$, for a complete listing see [37] or Appendix A. 2 ..... 57
V. 3 Anomaly $U(1)-U(1)-U(1)$ computation. ..... 68
A. 1 Up-type Quark terms. ..... 103
A. 2 Down-type Quark terms. ..... 104
A. 3 Electron-type terms. ..... 105
A. 4 Tabulated numerical values of Moduli ..... 106
A. 5 Full content of three families from $E_{8}$ ..... 107

## LIST OF FIGURES

I. 1 Road map for this thesis ..... 3
II. 1 Dynkin diagrams ..... 18
II. $2 \mathrm{An} A_{3}$ type singularity being fully resolved will have a configuration of three Riemann spheres $\mathbb{P}^{1}(\mathbb{C})$ which intersect according to $A_{3}$ Dynkin diagram. Note that every two spheres intersect at most at one point transversely. ..... 19
III. 1 String duality ..... 24
III. 2 Taub-NUT geometry with four D-branes transverse to four points $x_{a}$ on $\mathbb{R}^{3}$. The $S^{1}$ fibration creates three 2-spheres in M theory ..... 31
IV. 1 The three red, blue, and green branes intersects at the dotted lines. The worldsheet instanton is wrapped around the solid triangle whose topology is a disk. This passes through three different vertices Q, q, and H. This gives the Yukawa coupling for the term $H Q q$ in the lagrangian ..... 48
V. 1 Breaking of $E_{8}$ by resolving singularity ..... 53
V. 2 One solution found numerically. ..... 65


#### Abstract

String theories are good candidates for unifying the Standard Model and general relativity. M theory is the non-perturbative limit of all string theories. Moreover, it has been shown that M theory should be compactified on $G_{2}$ manifold with ADE singularities. How this model deals with unsolved questions in physics is a good test for the validity of M theory. In this work, we will briefly cover the background in both math and physics for M theory compactified on $G_{2}$ manifold with ADE singularities. Then, we will discuss a linearized local model of this theory and use it to tackle physics questions such as quark mass hierarchy, neutrino mass, and proton decay. We see that in this model, geometrically the hierarchy of quark masses makes the solution for moduli very hard to find. This suggests a global model will be very predictive and testable through quark masses. Next, using the solution of the moduli, we compute neutrino Dirac mass terms and derive an estimation for neutrino masses. Notably, the masses of the two heavier light neutrinos are predicted to be about 0.05 eV and $0.009 \mathrm{eV}(0.05 \mathrm{eV}$ and 0.05 eV$)$ for normal (inverted) hierarchy.


## CHAPTER I

## Introduction

The Standard Model and general relativity are the two pillars of fundamental physics. However, the two theories are incompatible. Therefore, finding a consistent theory of quantum gravity that unifies the two theories has been the holy grail of physics. It is hoped that by unifying the two theories, we can also explain unsolved mysteries of modern physics such as the strong CP problem, the origin of neutrino mass, the hierarchy problem, and so on.

String theories appear to be the most promising candidates for such a unified theory. They are 10-dimensional theories that naturally contain quantum gravity. Moreover, they do not suffer from ultraviolet divergences. Additionally, they contain only one parameter which is the string length. All of the string theories are the perturbative limit of a single 11-dimensional theory, called M-theory. M-theory does not have any free parameters as the only parameter of string theories, the string length, becomes part of the geometry. Thus, M-theory's geometry determines all the physics of the theory. This makes the theory attractive to many physicists. In order to be physical, M-theory must be compactified on a $G_{2}$ manifold with ADE singularities. While the $G_{2}$ manifold facilitates supersymmetry, the ADE singularities realize nonabelian gauge groups and charged fermions.

There are significant results in the physics of M-theory on these $G_{2}$ manifolds with ADE singularities. One prediction of compactified M-Theory is the existence of $\mathcal{N}=1$ supersymmetry and its soft breaking via gluino condensation, while simultaneously stabilizing all moduli [11, 110]. M-Theory accommodates radiative electroweak symmetry breaking [10], baryogenesis [92], a solution to the strong CP problem [12], and a mechanism for inflation [91]. Lastly, this framework can include a wide variety of hidden sector dark matter candidates and predict a supergravity spectrum in a wide class of Kähler potentials, although this is not completely a general result $[10,11]$.

In this work, Chapters II, III, and IV review foundational materials with some of my own interpretation. Chapter II covers some basic background for the mathematics behind $G_{2}$ manifold and $A D E$ singularities. Chapter III explains the path from string theories duality to M-theory on $G_{2}$ manifold with ADE singularities. Following that, Chapter IV
discusses some key facts about M-theory on $G_{2}$ manifold with ADE singularities. Note that the heavy details of the background, although necessary and useful, can be daunting. Readers are advised to skim through and come back for more details when needed in later chapters.

Most of the original work is in Chapter V and VI. A key challenge of studying Mtheory compactified on $G_{2}$ manifold with ADE singularities is that the global geometry is notoriously difficult to construct and study. Hence, we try a different approach. The problem is simplified by linearizing the local geometry of the singular $G_{2}$ manifold. In Chapter V , we propose a linearized model for $G_{2}$ manifold with resolved $E_{8}$ singularities. Using the local moduli as parameters, we compute the quark and charged lepton mass matrices. Then, we fit the experimental values to the eigenvalues of these matrices. We found a solution for these local moduli. In Chapter VI, we use this solution to compute Dirac mass terms for neutrino. After some discussions about the vacuum expectation values (VEVs) for the scalar component of right-handed neutrinos $\mu_{i}^{c}$, we deduce that masses of the two heavier light neutrinos are about 0.05 eV and $0.009 \mathrm{eV}(0.05 \mathrm{eV}$ and 0.05 eV$)$ ) for normal (inverted) hierarchy. Figure I plots out the general road map here.

## ROAD MAP



Figure I.1: Road map for this thesis

## CHAPTER II <br> Math Background

Geometry completely determines the physics of M-theory, so it is crucial to cover some geometry background relating to M-theory. There are two major geometric ingredients: a $G_{2}$ manifold and ADE singularities. M-theory is shown to be necessarily compactified on a $G_{2}$ manifold to preserve supersymmetry in a similar manner as how 10-d string theories are compactified on a Calabi-Yau manifold. The relation between $G_{2}$ manifolds and CalabiYau manifolds therefore directly reflects the lift from string theories to M-theory. We will spend the majority of this chapter covering the basic geometry building up to $G_{2}$ manifolds. Readers can find more details in standard materials such as [90, 93]. The last few sections introduce ADE singularities and their resolution. This will be crucial to our discussion about the nonabelian gauge in M-theory. This construction can be found in most standard materials [63, 112].

Sec. II. 1 defines the notion of holonomy. Sec. II. 2 discusses the classification of holonomy called Berger classification. This makes the lift of string theory geometry to M-theory more apparent. We review the basic geometry of Calabi-Yau and $G_{2}$ manifolds in Sec. II. 3 and II.4. These concepts are useful for explicit computations in differential forms and justify the construction of the M-theory. Next, we discuss ADE singularities in Sec. II.5. We try to give a concise pictorial explanation of the topic without evoking lengthy math. More explicit computation will be explored in Chapter V.

## II.1: Holonomy

We consider the definition of the holonomy group on vector bundles. A similar notion can be defined for principal bundles. It can also be shown that, for principal bundles associated with a vector bundle, the two notions produce the same holonomy group.

Definition II.1. Le $M$ be a manifold, $E$ a vector bundle over $M$, and $\nabla^{E}$ a connection on $E$. Suppose $\gamma:[0,1] \rightarrow M$ is piece-wise smooth, with $\gamma(0)=\gamma(1)=x . \gamma$ is called loop based
at $x$. Define $\operatorname{Hol}_{x}\left(\nabla^{E}\right)$ of $\nabla^{E}$ based at $x$ to be

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{Hol}_{x}\left(\nabla^{E}\right)=\left\{P_{\gamma}: \gamma \text { is a loop based at x }\right\} \subset G L\left(E_{x}\right) \tag{II.1.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $P_{\gamma}$ is the action on the vector space $E_{x}$ induced by the parallel transport along $\gamma$. In this work, we only focus on connected manifolds, so the holonomy group is independent of the base point up to a conjugation. So, we will drop the subscript base point $x$ in the notation.

## II.2: Classification of Riemannian holonomy groups

Theorem II. 2 (Berger). Suppose $M$ is a simply-connected manifold of dimension $n$ and that $g$ is a Riemannian metric on $M$ that is irreducible and nonsymmetic. Then exactly one of the following seven cases holds
(i) $\operatorname{Hol}(g)=S O(n)$
(ii) $n=2 m$ with $m \geq 2$, and $\operatorname{Hol}(g)=U(m)$ in $S O(2 m)$.
(iii) $n=2 m$ with $m \geq 2$, and $\operatorname{Hol}(g)=S U(m)$ in $S O(2 m)$,
(iv) $n=4 m$ with $m \geq 2$, and $\operatorname{Hol}(g)=S p(m)$ in $S O(4 m)$,
(v) $n=4 m$ with $m \geq 2$, and $\operatorname{Hol}(g)=S p(m) S p(1)$ in $S O(4 m)$,
(vi) $n=7$ and $\operatorname{Hol}(g)=G_{2}$ in $S O(7)$, or
(vii) $n=8$ and $\operatorname{Hol}(g)=\operatorname{Spin}(7)$ in $S O(8)$.

The followings are some remarks about above holonomy groups. we will discuss in details about Calabi-Yau and $G_{2}$ manifold later.

- A manifold with $\operatorname{Hol}(g) \subseteq U(m)$ are called Kähler manifold. This is a natural class of metrics on complex manifolds.
- A manifold with $\operatorname{Hol}(g) \subseteq S U(m)$ are called Calabi - Yau manifold. Since $S U(m) \subseteq$ $U(m)$, it is also Kähler manifold. If $g$ is Kähler. then the restricted holonomy group $\operatorname{Hol}^{0}(g) \subseteq S U(m)$ if and only if $g$ is Ricci-flat. Locally, Calabi-Yau metrics are the same as Ricci-flat Kähler metrics.
- A manifold with $\operatorname{Hol}(g) \subseteq S p(m)$ are called hyperkähler manifold. As $S p(m) \subseteq$ $S U(2 m) \subseteq U(2 m)$ hyperkähler metric is also Calabi - Yau.
- A metric $g$ with $\operatorname{Hol}(g)=S p(m) S p(1)$ for $m \geq 2$ is called quaternionic hyperkähler. It is in fact not Kähler. It is Einstein ${ }^{1}$, but not Ricci-flat.
- The holonomy groups $G_{2}$ and $\operatorname{Spin}(7)$ are called the exceptional holonomy groups.

In string/M-theory context, the physical inspiration for the holonomy type would be the existence of invariant spinors due to supersymmetry. The requirement for preserving $n$ supersymmetries is the existence of $n$ invariant spinors. Therefore, the classification by invariant spinor would be much more direct and intuitive

Theorem II.3. Let $M$ be an orientable, connected, simply-connected spin n-manifold for $n \geq 3$. and $g$ an irreducible Riemannian metric on $M$. Define $N$ to be the dimension of parallel spinors on $M$. If $n$ is even, define $N_{ \pm}$to be the dimensions of the spaces of parallel spinors in $C^{\infty}\left(S_{ \pm}\right)$, so that $N=N_{+}+N_{-}$. Suppose $N \geq 1$. Then, fixing the orientation, exactly one of the following hold

1. $n=4 m$ for $m \geq 1$ and $\operatorname{Hol}(g)=S U(2 m)$, with $N_{+}=2$ and $N_{-}=0$
2. $n=4 m$ for $m \geq 2$ and $\operatorname{Hol}(g)=\operatorname{Sp}(m)$, with $N_{+}=m+1$ and $N_{-}=0$
3. $n=4 m+2$ for $m \geq 1$ and $\operatorname{Hol}(g)=S U(2 m)$, with $N_{+}=1$ and $N_{-}=1$
4. $n=7$ and $\operatorname{Hol}(g)=G_{2}$, with $N=1$
5. $n=8$ and $\operatorname{Hol}(g)=\operatorname{Spin}(7)$, with $N_{+}=1$ and $N_{-}=0$

So the Calabi-Yau 6-fold (case 3, $n=6, m=1$ ) and $G_{2}$ manifold (case 4, $n=7$ ) on which string and $M$ theories are compactified are due to the existence of 2 parallel spinors and 1 parallel spinor respectively.

[^0]
## II.3: Calabi-Yau manifold

Calabi-Yau manifold (CY N-fold) is

- 2N-real-dimensional or N-complex-dimensional
- Tangent vectors rotate by $S U(N)$ subgroup of $S O(2 N)$ under parallel transport along closed loop
- Controlled by complex structure $I$ and Kähler form $J$


## II.3.1: Complex manifold

An $N$-dimensional complex manifold is a $2 N$-dimensional manifold on which we can introduce local complex coordinates which can be patched together globally in a consistent way (i.e with holomorphic transition functions). More concretely, a $2 N$-dimensional manifold is a complex manifold if it admits a globally defined complex structure, i.e a mixed tensor $J_{m}^{n}$ satisfying $J_{m}^{n} J_{n}^{l}=-\delta_{m}^{l}$ (almost complex structure) which induces the vanishing of the Niejenhuis tensor which is defined as

$$
\begin{equation*}
N_{m n}^{P}=\delta_{[n} J_{m]}^{p}-J_{[m}^{q} J_{n]}^{r} \delta_{r} J_{q}^{p}=0 \tag{II.3.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

This is a condition required for local complex coordinates to patch together holomorphically.

It is noteworthy that if $M$ admits an almost complex structure, it must be even-dimensional. This can be seen as follows. Suppose $M$ is n-dimensional, and let J : TM $\rightarrow$ TM be an almost complex structure. If $J^{2}=1$ then $(\operatorname{det} J)^{2}=(1)^{n}$. But if $M$ is a real manifold, then $\operatorname{det} J$ is a real number - thus $n$ must be even if $M$ has an almost complex structure. One can show that it must be orientable as well.

Moreover, an even-dimensional manifold does not necessarily have an almost complex structure. An easy exercise in linear algebra shows that any even-dimensional vector space admits a linear complex structure. Therefore, an even-dimensional manifold always admits a (1,1)-rank tensor pointwise (which is just a linear transformation on each tangent space) such that $J_{p}^{2}=1$ at each point p . Only when this local tensor can be patched together to be defined globally does the pointwise linear complex structure yield an almost complex structure, which is then uniquely determined.

The complex struture tensor can be used to define local complex coordinates as follows.

Split the real coordinates to two sets $x^{j}, y^{j}$ for $j=1, \ldots, N$, so that locally $J=\left(\begin{array}{cc}0 & \mathbf{1}_{N} \\ -\mathbf{1}_{N} & 0\end{array}\right)$, and construct complex coordinates as $d z^{j}=d x^{j}+i I_{k}^{j} d y^{k}$ and $d \bar{z}^{j}=d x^{j}-i I_{k}^{j} d x^{k}$. Note that a given real differential manifold can admit many complex structures.

## II.3.2: Kähler manifold

On a complex manifold, one can introduce a metric whose only non-zero components are mixed, gamely $g_{i \bar{j}}$. Using this metric to lower one index from the complex structure we obtain a 2-form with mixed indices,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\omega=g_{i \bar{j}} d z^{i} \wedge d \bar{z}^{\bar{j}} \tag{II.3.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

Equivalent defininitions would be

- $\omega(u, v)=g(J u, v)$ for all vector fields $\mathrm{u}, \mathrm{v}$
- $\omega_{a c}=J_{a}^{b} g_{b c}$

A manifold is Kähler if this form is closed

$$
\begin{equation*}
d \omega=0 \tag{II.3.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

in which case it is called the Kähler form. The relevance of the Kähler condition in our setup is that the condition constrains the metric such that parallel transport does not mix holomorphic and anti-holomorphic indices, i.e, the holonomy group is at most $U(N) \simeq$ $S U(N) \times U(1)$.

## II.3.3: Calabi-Yau manifold

A further reduction to $S U(N)$ requires the absence of holonomy in the overall $U(1)$ factor and is related to the "vanishing of the first Chern class ${ }^{2}$ )". It can be shown that on a Kähler manifold, the vanishing of the first Chern class is equivalent with the vanishing of the curvature form $R_{i \bar{j}}$, i.e, the manifold is Ricci-flat. We will come back to the geometry of the Calabi-Yau manifold in Sec. II.3.6 after defining a few key concepts.

## II.3.4: Hodge number

Given a topological space satisfying the Calabi-Yau conditions, we would like to count the number of free parameters in the choice of its $S U(N)$ holonomy metric. This is analog of

[^1]the choice of compactification radius for a compactification on a space with the topology of a circle. This number of parameters is given by certain topological invariants, the Hodge number. Let us define this briefly in the following.

Let $T M \otimes_{\mathbb{R}} \mathbb{C}$ be the complexified tangent bundle of a complex manifold $M$. At each point $p$ on $M$, the complex structure $I$ satisfies $I_{p}^{2}=-i d$, so the eigenvalues of $I_{p}$ are $\pm i$. Hence, we can split the tangent bundle into the bundles generated by eigenvectors of eigenvalues $i$ and $-i$ as $T M \otimes_{\mathbb{R}} \mathbb{C}=T^{(1,0)} M \oplus T^{(0,1)} M$.

We can futher split the cotangent bundle $T^{*} M \otimes_{\mathbb{R}} \mathbb{C}=T^{*(1,0)} M \oplus T^{*(0,1)} M$. Using this, the exterior power of the cotangent bundle is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Lambda^{k} T^{*} M \otimes_{\mathbb{R}} \mathbb{C}=\bigoplus_{j=0}^{k} \Lambda^{j} T^{*(1,0)} M \otimes \Lambda^{k-j} T^{*(0,1)} M \equiv \bigoplus_{j=0}^{k} \Lambda^{j, k-j} M \tag{II.3.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

where we define $\Lambda^{p, q} M$ to be $\Lambda^{p} T^{*(1,0)} M \otimes \Lambda^{q} T^{*(0,1)} M$. A section of $\Lambda^{p, q} M$ is called a $(p, q)$ form.

We can also split the exterior derivative d on complex $k$-forms into components $d=\partial+\bar{\partial}$ where $\partial$ and $\bar{\partial}$ map the vector space of $(p, q)$-form $C^{\infty}\left(\Lambda^{p, q} M\right)$ to $\Lambda^{p+1, q} M$ and $\Lambda^{p, q+1} M$ respectively. Then $d^{2}=0$ implies $\partial^{2}=\bar{\partial}^{2}=0$ and $\partial \bar{\partial}+\bar{\partial} \partial=0$. As $\bar{\partial}^{2}=0$, similar to de Rham cohomology $H_{d}^{k}(M)$, we may define the Dolbeault cohomology groups of $H_{\bar{\partial}}^{p, q}(M)$ of a complex manifold, by

$$
\begin{equation*}
H_{\bar{\partial}}^{p, q}(M)=\frac{\operatorname{Ker}\left(\bar{\partial}: C^{\infty}\left(\Lambda^{p, q} M\right) \rightarrow C^{\infty}\left(\Lambda^{p, q+1} M\right)\right)}{\operatorname{Im}\left(\bar{\partial}: C^{\infty}\left(\Lambda^{p, q-1} M\right) \rightarrow C^{\infty}\left(\Lambda^{p, q} M\right)\right)} . \tag{II.3.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

In other words, Dolbeault cohomology groups contain classes of closed forms where elements of the same class are different by an exact form, with respect to $\bar{\partial}$.

In general complex manifolds, we cannot say much about this cohomology, but for compact Kähler manifolds, we have a wonderful decomposition of de Rham cohomology groups:

Theorem II. 4 (Hodge decomposition). For a compact Kähler manifold M,

$$
\begin{equation*}
H_{d}^{k}(M, \mathbb{C})=\bigoplus_{j=0}^{k} H_{\bar{\partial}}^{j, k-j}(M) \tag{II.3.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

This decomposition depends on the complex structure, not on any choice of a particular Kähler metric. Moreover, $h^{p, q}=\operatorname{dim} H_{\partial}^{p, q}(M)$ is called Hodge number. Then, the Betti
number $b^{k}$, which is $\operatorname{dim} H_{d}^{k}(M, \mathbb{C})$, is decomposed to

$$
\begin{equation*}
b^{k}=\sum_{j=0}^{k} h^{j, k-j} \tag{II.3.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

Moreover, it can also be shown that

$$
\begin{equation*}
h^{p, q}=h^{q, p}=h^{m-q, m-p}=h^{m-p, m-q} \tag{II.3.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $m$ is the complex dimension of M. The set of Hodge numbers characterize the topology of the Kähler manifold. However, this decomposition is not a irreducible decomposition in general, so there is some loss of topological information. Yet, this is enough for us to learn a lot about the manifold. In the next chapter, we will see more concretely how the Hodge numbers relate to the parameters of the manifold.

## II.3.5: Harmonic decomposition

We will try to define the Laplacian operator on Kähler manifolds. First, we will define the inner product of the complex k-form. Define a pointwise product $(\alpha, \beta)$ on $M$ by

$$
\begin{equation*}
(\alpha, \beta)=\alpha_{a_{1} \ldots a_{k}} \overline{\beta_{b_{1} \ldots b_{k}}} g^{a_{1} b_{1}} \ldots g^{a_{k} b_{k}} \tag{II.3.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

When $M$ is compact, define the $L^{2}$ inner product of complex k -forms $\alpha, \beta$ by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\langle\alpha, \beta\rangle=\int_{M}(\alpha, \beta) d V_{g} \tag{II.3.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then, $\langle$,$\rangle is a Hermitian inner product on the space of complex \mathrm{k}$-forms.
Next, let the Hodge star on Kähler manifolds be the unique map $*: \Lambda^{k} T^{*} M \otimes_{\mathbb{R}} \mathbb{C} \rightarrow$ $\Lambda^{2 m-k} T^{*} M \otimes_{\mathbb{R}} \mathbb{C}$ satisfying the equation $\alpha \wedge(* \beta)=(\alpha, \beta) d V_{g}$ for all complex k-forms $\alpha, \beta$. Then, we can define operators $d^{*}, \partial^{*}$, and $\bar{\partial}^{*}$ by

$$
\begin{equation*}
d^{*} \alpha=-* d(* \alpha), \quad \partial^{*} \alpha=-* \partial(* \alpha) \quad \text { and } \quad \bar{\partial}^{*} \alpha=-* \bar{\partial}(* \alpha) . \tag{II.3.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then $d^{*}, \partial^{*}$, and $\bar{\partial}^{*}$ take the complex k-forms to complex (k-1)-forms. Moreover, it can be shown that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\langle\alpha, d^{*} \beta\right\rangle=\langle d \alpha, \beta\rangle, \quad\left\langle\alpha, \partial^{*} \beta\right\rangle=\langle\partial \alpha, \beta\rangle \quad \text { and } \quad\left\langle\alpha, \bar{\partial}^{*} \beta\right\rangle=\langle\bar{\partial} \alpha, \beta\rangle \tag{II.3.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

Now, we can define Laplacian operators. Similar to the Riemannian case, we can make three
different Laplacians on complex k -forms

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Delta_{d}=d d^{*}+d^{*} d, \quad \Delta_{\partial}=\partial \partial^{*} \quad \Delta_{\bar{\partial}}=\bar{\partial} \bar{\partial}^{*}+\bar{\partial}^{*} \bar{\partial} \tag{II.3.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

It can be shown that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Delta_{\partial}=\Delta_{\bar{\partial}}=\frac{1}{2} \Delta_{d} \tag{II.3.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then, harmonic form $\omega$ is defined to be a complex k-form that satsifies $\Delta \omega=0$. Define $H^{p, q}(M)$ to be the vector subspace of $H^{p+q}(M, \mathbb{C})$ with harmonic ( $\mathrm{p}, \mathrm{q}$ )-form representatives. Now, the important result is that

Theorem II.5. Let $M$ be a compact Kähler manifold. Every element of $H^{p . q}(M)$ is represented by a unique harmonic ( $p, q$ )-form. Moreover, for all $p$, $q$ we have $H^{p, q}(M) \simeq H_{\bar{\partial}}^{p, q}(M)$

So, in fact, we can decompose the cohomology into classes of unique harmonic representatives. Thus, the Hodge numbers in fact count harmonic forms on the manifold. Each of these harmonic forms is unique in their cohomology class, so the harmonic forms. This is important in the physics context because, we will see later, the physical equations require that the massless states are zero modes of harmonic form decomposition. The light spectrum in the supergravity limit is derived from this decomposition.

## II.3.6: Calabi-Yau manifold - Basic geometry

Theorem II.6. Let $(M, J, g)$ be a Kähler manifold. The $\operatorname{Hol}^{0}(g) \subseteq S U(m)$ if and only if $g$ is Ricci-flat.

Calabi-Yau manifolds have slightly different definitions depending on the literature. We will consider a Calabi-Yau manifold as a compact Kähler manifold ( $M, J, g$ ) with holonomy $H o l(g) \subseteq S U(m)$. The existence of a Ricci-flat metric is in fact equivalent to the vanishing first Chern class in a compact Kähler manifold. Recall the Chern classes can be defined in explicit form by the formal expansion of $\operatorname{Tr} \exp \left(\frac{R}{2 \pi}\right)$, i.e

$$
\begin{equation*}
c_{n}=\frac{1}{n!(2 \pi)^{n}} \operatorname{Tr} R^{n} \tag{II.3.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $R$ is the curvature form of the maniold
Theorem II.7. Let $(M, J)$ be a compact complex manifold admitting Kähler metrics with $c_{1}(M)=0$. Then, there is a unique Ricci-flat Kähler metric in each Kähler class in $H^{1,1}(M)$
on $M$. The Ricci-flat Kähler metrics on $M$ form a smooth family of dimension $h^{1,1}(M)$.
The consequence of this is that given a Kähler manifold $M$, the necessary and sufficient condition for being Calabi-Yau is a vanishing first Chern class. Moreover, for each class in $H^{1,1}(M)$, there is a unique Calabi-Yau metric for the manifold. Thus, we can use this to parametrize the possible scenarios for a given topology. Concretely, each class of $H^{1,1}(M)$ is represented by a unique harmonic form, so we can parametrize the Kähler form $\omega$ by these harmonic forms

$$
\begin{equation*}
\omega=\sum_{a=1}^{h_{1,1}} t_{a} \omega_{a} \tag{II.3.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $t_{a}$ are real scalars, which called Kähler moduli of the Calabi-Yau manifold, and control the sizes of even-dimensional 2 n -cycles of the internal space, whose volumes are measured by integrating the 2 -form $\omega^{n}$ over them (Wirtinger's formula). In particular, $\omega^{m}$ is the volume form of a Calabi-Yau m-fold.

Another equivalent condition for a Calabi-Yau m-fold is being a Kähler manifold admitting a nowhere vanishing ( $\mathrm{m}, 0$ ) form $\Omega$. In the case of Calabi-Yau 3-fold, the choice of a complex structure tensor is equivalent, via contraction with $\Omega$, to the choice of a $(2,1)$ form $I_{i j \bar{k}}=\Omega_{i j l} I_{\bar{k}}^{l}$. Expanding in a basis, there are $h_{2,1}$ complex parameters involved in the choice of the complex structure. These are known as complex structure moduli of the CalabiYau, and control the sizes of 3 cycles of the internal space whose volumes are measured by integrating $\Omega$ over them.

Thus, the parameters required to specify a unique metric in a given Calabi-Yau compactification space are the $h_{1,1}$ real Kähler moduli and the $h_{2,1}$ complex structure moduli.

In the string theory context, the original condition for Calabi-Yau manifolds was the existence of a covariantly constant spinor $\xi$. From it, we can construct the forms

$$
\omega_{i \bar{j}}=-\xi^{\dagger} \Gamma_{i} \Gamma_{\bar{j}} \xi, \quad \quad \Omega_{i j k}=\xi^{T} \Gamma_{i} \Gamma_{j} \Gamma_{k} \xi
$$

where $\Gamma_{i}$ are 6d Gamma matrices.

## II.3.7: Special Lagrangian

Special Lagrangian 3-cycles $\Pi$ are volume minimizing 3-cycles. It is defined by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left.\omega\right|_{\Pi}=\left.0 \quad \operatorname{Im}\left(e^{i \phi} \Omega_{3}\right)\right|_{\Pi}=0 \tag{II.3.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

for some fixed $\phi$. Then, the volume of $\Pi$ is given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{Vol}(\Pi)=\int_{\Pi} \operatorname{Re}\left(e^{-i \phi} \Omega_{3}\right) \tag{II.3.19}
\end{equation*}
$$

This submanifold is important because, in string theories, this is where the 6D-branes are wrapping and stabilized. It preserves the $4 \mathrm{~d} \mathbb{N}=1$ supersymmetry, so it is also called a supersymmetric cycle. We will revisit this in the later review of type IIA string theory. The analog of this in a $G_{2}$ manifold is an associative 3-cycle which will be the base for the ADE singularity fibration in the M-theory model.

## II.4: $G_{2}$ manifold

## $G_{2}$ manifold is

- 7-dimensional
- tangent vectors rotate by the $G_{2}$ subgroup of $S O(7)$ under parallel transport along closed loop
- controlled by a 3 -form $\phi$ and its dual $* \phi$
- If $M$ is a seven-dimensional spin manifold, then $M$ carries a non-trivial parallel spinor field if and only if the holonomy is contained in $G_{2}$.


## II.4.1: overview and definitions

The local model for a $G_{2}$ manifold is $\mathbb{R}^{7}$ where, if we impose $\mathbb{R}^{7}=\mathbb{R}^{3} \oplus \mathbb{R}^{4}$ with coordinate $\left(x_{1}, x_{2}, x_{3}\right)$ on $\mathbb{R}^{3}$ and $\left(y_{0}, y_{1}, y_{2}, y_{3}\right)$ on $\mathbb{R}^{4}$, we define the 3 -form:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\varphi_{\mathbb{R}^{7}}=d x_{1} \wedge d x_{2} \wedge d x_{3}+d x_{1} \wedge \omega_{1}+d x_{2} \wedge \omega_{2}+d x_{3} \wedge \omega_{3} \tag{II.4.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where

$$
\begin{equation*}
\omega_{1}=d y_{0} \wedge d y_{1}-d y_{2} \wedge d y_{3}, \quad \omega_{2}=d y_{0} \wedge d y_{2}-d y_{3} \wedge d y_{1}, \quad \omega_{3}=d y_{0} \wedge d y_{3}-d y_{1} \wedge d y_{2} \tag{II.4.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

form an orthogonal basis for the anti-self-dual 2 -forms on $\mathbb{R}^{4}$. The stabilizer of $\varphi_{\mathbb{R}^{7}}$ in $G L(7, \mathbb{R})$ is isomorphic to the group $G_{2}$. Moreover, $G_{2}$ can be described as the automorphism group of the octonion algebra $\mathbb{O}$. Perhaps the most useful definition is $G_{2}$ as the
subgroup of $S O(7)$ that preserves any chosen particular vector in its 8-dimensional real spinor representation. The last definition is directly used in M-theory as a $G_{2}$ manifold has one invariant spinor due to supersymmetry. However, the explicit local form in the first definition is useful in computation and visualization of the geometry in the following.

Definition II.8. A smooth 3 -form $\varphi$ on a 7 -manifold $M$ is a $G_{2}$-structure if for all $x \in M$, there exists an isomorphism $i_{x}: \mathbb{R}^{7} \rightarrow T_{x} M$ so that $i_{x}^{*} \varphi=\varphi_{\mathbb{R}^{7}}$. This structure is sometimes called a definite or positive 3 -form.

A $G_{2}$-structure $\varphi$ defines a metric $g_{\varphi}$ and orientation on $M$, given by volume form $\operatorname{vol}_{\varphi}$, and thus a Hodge star operator $*$ on $M$. In fact, one has that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{vol}_{\varphi}=\frac{1}{7} \varphi \wedge *_{\varphi} \varphi . \tag{II.4.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

In $\mathbb{R}^{7}$, one sees explicitly that $\varphi_{\mathbb{R}^{7}}$ induces the flat metric on $\mathbb{R}^{7}$ and the standard volume form, and that the Hodge dual of $\varphi_{\mathbb{R}^{7}}$ is:

$$
\begin{equation*}
*_{\varphi_{\mathbb{R}^{7}}}{\varphi \mathbb{R}^{7}}=d y_{0} \wedge d y_{1} \wedge d y_{2} \wedge d y_{3}-d x_{2} \wedge d x_{3} \wedge \omega_{1}-d x_{3} \wedge d x_{1} \wedge \omega_{2}-d x_{1} \wedge d x_{2} \wedge \omega_{3} . \tag{II.4.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

A 3-form $\varphi$ on $\mathbb{R}^{7}$ gives rise to a canonical symmetric bilinear form on $\mathbb{R}^{7}$

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left.\left.B_{\varphi}(X, Y)=-\frac{1}{6}(X\lrcorner \varphi\right) \wedge(Y\lrcorner \varphi\right) \wedge \varphi \tag{II.4.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

with value in $\Lambda^{7}\left(\mathbb{R}^{7}\right)^{*}$. For a generic three-form $\varphi$, the bilinear form $B_{\varphi}$ yields a nondegenerate pairing for some signature $(p, q)$ with $p+q=7$ (with respect to an oriented volume form on $\left.\mathbb{R}^{7}\right)$. In particular, there is an open set $\Lambda_{+}^{3}\left(\mathbb{R}^{7}\right) *$ in the space of 3-form $\Lambda^{3}\left(\mathbb{R}^{7}\right) *$ such that $B_{\varphi}$ is a positive definite bilinear form for $\varphi \in \Lambda_{+}^{3}\left(\mathbb{R}^{7}\right)^{*}$. The $G L(7, \mathbb{R})$ acts on the 3 -form $\varphi$ and $G_{2}$ is its 14 -dimensional stabilizer subgroup. Since $G_{2}$ leaves the positive definite pairing $B_{\varphi}$ invariant, it is actually a subgroup of $S O(7)$.

Remark II.9. Being positive definite is crucial for defining a Riemannian metric.
Since the Lie group $G_{2}$ is the stabilizer group of the described 3-form, a 7-dimensional oriented manifold $Y$ together with the 3 -form in $\Omega_{+}^{3}(Y)$ (which is the space of smooth 3-forms and isomorphic to $\Lambda^{3} T_{p}^{*}(Y) \approx \Lambda_{+}^{3}\left(\mathbb{R}^{7}\right)^{*}$ for any $\left.p \in M\right)$ becomes a $G_{2}$-structure manifold.
Remark II.10. $\Lambda_{+}^{3}\left(\mathbb{R}^{7}\right)^{*}$ is a convex open set in $\Lambda^{3}\left(\mathbb{R}^{7}\right)^{*}$. Thus, with partition of unity, we can construct a $G_{2}$ structure on any smooth paracompact 7-dimensional manifold $Y$.

Thus, we call $\varphi$ a $G_{2}$-structure on $Y$. Furthermore, the positive definite pairing II.4.5 defines a Riemannian metric $g_{\varphi}$ on $Y$. Namely, at any point $p \in M$ and for any basis
$\left.\partial_{1}\right|_{p}, \ldots,\left.\partial_{7}\right|_{p}$ at $T_{p} Y$, we obtain a positive definite inner product

$$
\begin{array}{r}
g_{\varphi}\left(X_{p}, Y_{p}\right)=\frac{B_{\varphi}\left(X_{p}, Y_{p}\right)\left(\left.\partial_{1}\right|_{p}, \ldots,\left.\partial_{7}\right|_{p}\right)}{\operatorname{vol}_{p}\left(\left.\partial_{1}\right|_{p}, \ldots,\left.\partial_{7}\right|_{p}\right)} \\
\operatorname{vol}_{p}\left(\left.\partial_{1}\right|_{p}, \ldots,\left.\partial_{7}\right|_{p}\right)^{9}=\operatorname{det}\left[B_{\varphi}\left(\left.\partial_{i}\right|_{p}, \partial_{j} \mid p\right)\left(\left.\partial_{1}\right|_{p}, \ldots, \partial_{7} \mid p\right)\right] \tag{II.4.7}
\end{array}
$$

Theorem II.11. A $G_{2}$-structure manifold has a subgroup of $G_{2}$ as its holonomy group if and only if the 3-form $\varphi$ is harmonic with respect to the constructed $G_{2}$ metric $g_{\varphi}$ [66]

$$
\begin{equation*}
d \varphi=0, \quad d *_{g_{\varphi}} \varphi=0 \tag{II.4.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

in terms of Hodge star $*_{g_{\varphi}}$ of the metric $g$.
Such a harmonic 3-form in $\Omega_{+}^{3}(Y)$ is called torsion-free. Requiring in addition a finite fundamental group $\phi_{1}(Y)$ ensures that $Y$ has $G_{2}$ homology and not a proper subgroup thereof. Given a torsion free $G_{2}$-structure of a $G_{2}$-manifold, the local structure of the moduli space $\mathcal{M}$ of $G_{2}$-manifolds is known due to Joyce [89]. In particular the Betti number $b_{3}(Y)$ is the dimension of $\mathcal{M}$.

Definition II.12. We say that $\left(M^{7}, \varphi\right)$ is a $G_{2}$ manifold if $\varphi$ is a $G_{2}$-structure on $M$ which is torsion-free, which means that

$$
\begin{equation*}
d \varphi=0 \quad d *_{\varphi} \varphi=0 \tag{II.4.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

The following are equivalent conditions for torsion-free (Prop 10.1.3 [90]):

- $(\varphi, g)$ is torsion-free,
- $\operatorname{Hol}(g) \subset G_{2}$, and $\varphi$ is the induced 3-form,
- $\nabla \varphi=0$ on $M$, where $\nabla$ is the Levi-Civita connection of $g$,
- $d \varphi=d^{*} \varphi=0$ on $M$, and
- $d \varphi=d * \varphi=0$ on $M$


## II.4.2: Associative and coassociative cycles

We are interested in a distinguished class of 4-dimensional submanifolds called coassociative 4 - folds

Definition II.13. An oriented 4-dimensional submanifold $N^{4}$ of a $G_{2}$ manifold $\left(M^{7}, \varphi\right)$ is coassociative if $N$ is calibrated by $* \varphi$. This means that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left.* \varphi\right|_{N}=\operatorname{vol}_{N} \tag{II.4.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

Equivalently [83], up to a choice of orientation $N^{4}$ is coassociative if and only if

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left.\varphi\right|_{N}=0 \tag{II.4.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

Another important class of submanifolds that we encounter is
Definition II.14. An oriented 3-dimensional submanifold $L$ of a $G_{2}$ maniofld $(M, \varphi)$ is associative if $L$ is calibrated by $\varphi$. This means that

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left.\varphi\right|_{L}=\operatorname{vol}_{L} \tag{II.4.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

Remark II.15. The orthogonal complement of an associative 3-plane is a coassociative 4plane, and vice versa

Remark II.16. Associative 3-cycles of $G_{2}$ manifolds are analog of special Lagrangian 3-cycles of Calabi-Yau manifolds.

Definition II.17. Let $M$ be a $G_{2}$ manifold. We say that $M$ admits a coassociative fibration if there is a 3-dimensional space $\mathcal{B}$ parametrizing a family of coasociative submanifold $N_{b}$ for $b \in \mathcal{B}$ of $M$, with the following two properties

- The family $\left\{N_{b}: b \in \mathcal{B}\right\}$ covers $M$ and there is a dense open subset $\mathcal{B}^{\circ}$ of $\mathcal{B}$ such that $N_{b}$ is smooth for all $b \in \mathcal{B}^{\circ}$. That is, every point $p \in M$ lies in at least one coassociative submanifold $N_{b}$, and a generic member of the family is smooth.
- On a dense open set $M^{\prime}$ of $M$, there is a genuine fibration of $M^{\prime}$ onto a submanifold $\mathcal{B}^{\prime}$ of $\mathcal{B}$, in the sense that there is a smooth map $\pi: M^{\prime} \rightarrow \mathcal{B}^{\prime}$ which is a locally trivial fibration, and such that $\pi^{-1}(b)=N_{b}$ for each $b \in \mathcal{B}$

Remark II.18. The set $\mathcal{B} \backslash \mathcal{B}^{\circ}$ parametrizes singular fibres in the fibration, and the set $M \backslash M^{\prime}$ consists of the points where two coassociatives in the family $\left\{N_{b}: b \in \mathcal{B}\right\}$ intersect.

Suppose that a $G_{2}$ manifold $\left(M, \varphi, g_{\varphi},{ }_{\varphi} \varphi\right)$ can be described as a fibration by coassociative submanifolds. Then its tangent bundle $T M$ admits a vertical subbundle $V$, which is the bundle of (coassociative) tangent subspaces of the coassociative fibers of $M$. Since coassociative subspaces come equipped with a preference of orientation, the bundle $V$ is oriented.

A local vertical vector field is a local section of $V$, and hence is everywhere tangent to the coassociative fibers. In fact, for most of the known study of M-theory on $G_{2}$ manifold with ADE singularities, the $G_{2}$ manifold is assumed to have coassociative fibration. The ADE singularities live on the coassociative submanifolds $N_{b}$ of the local form $\mathbb{C}^{2} / \Gamma$ where $\Gamma$ is a $S U(2)$ finite subgroup.

Finally, it is useful to make a connection between Calabi-Yau and $G_{2}$ manifolds since Mtheory is considered to be non-perturbative limit of string theories. Assume a $G_{2}$ manifold $M$ is locally an elliptic fiberation of a 6 d Calabi-Yau manifold with Kähler form $\omega$ and holomorphic 3 -form $\Omega_{3}$. Then, the $G_{2}$ structure $\phi$ on $M$ can be identified by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\phi=\operatorname{Re}\left(\Omega_{3}\right)+\omega \wedge d x_{7} \quad * \phi=\operatorname{Im}\left(\Omega_{3}\right) \wedge d x^{7}-\frac{1}{2} \omega \wedge \omega \tag{II.4.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

This shows how the local spectrum of string theories is lifted to M-theory, as we can lift each harmonic mode to M-theory accordingly. Of course, this provides hints and inspiration, but never the full picture because the global $G_{2}$ structure is much more complicated.

Notice that all of the above discussion is about smooth $G_{2}$ manifold. In M-theory, we will later see that a singular M-theory is required. In particular, we are interested in $G_{2}$ manifolds with ADE singularities. However, the construction of $G_{2}$ manifold with ADE singularities is mathematically challenging. Only recently some works have claimed to construct $G_{2}$ manifolds with $E_{n}$ singularities [113]. Thus, in the later chapters, we will only consider a local model of $G_{2}$ with $A D E$ singularities and assume that all of the above smooth properties are still satisfied.

## II.5: ADE singularity

An ADE singularity, or Du Val singularity, is a point $p$ whose local neighborhood is isomorphic to the local neighborhood of $0 \in \mathbb{C}^{2} / \Gamma$ where $\Gamma$ is a finite subgroup of $S L(2, \mathbb{C})$. As every finite subgroup of $S L(2, \mathbb{C})$ is conjugate to a finite subgroup of $S U(2)$, it suffices to study finite subgroups of $S U(2)$. The singularity can be smoothened out by "blowing up" the singularity. For simplicity, we consider the definition of blown-up most relevant to our work.

Definition II.19. Consider $X=\mathbb{C}^{2} / \Gamma$ with singularity at the origin 0 . A blown-up $\tilde{X}$ of $X$ at 0 is defined to be

$$
\begin{equation*}
\tilde{X}=\left\{((x, y),(u: v)) \in X \times \mathbb{C P}^{1} \mid x v=y u\right\} \tag{II.5.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

Recall that $\mathbb{C P}^{1}$ is topologically a 2 -sphere. In essence, $\tilde{X}$ is exactly $X$ except the singular point is being blown up into a sphere. $\tilde{X}$ is called a resolution of $X$. From here, readers can similarly define blowing-up for a general $X$ with ADE singular point $p$ whose local neighborhood is isomorphic to $0 \in \mathbb{C}^{2} / \Gamma$.

Define a projection map $\pi: \tilde{X} \rightarrow X$. Then, $\pi^{-1}(p)$ is called an exceptional divisor. If we start from II.19, the exceptional divisor is a sphere. However, oftentimes, the blowing-up may not be enough to completely smoothen the singularity, and there are still singular points on the sphere (although with a lesser degree). In this case, we can repeat the blowing-up procedure on these singular points until the manifold is completely smoothened. Then, the exceptional divisor is a collection of spheres intersecting transversely. The configuration of how these spheres intersect is exactly the Dynkin diagram of simply-laced Lie groups. These groups are classified into A, D, and E types, hence the name of this type of singularities. Figure II. 1 gives a list of these diagrams. Consider one example, Figure II. 2 gives a pictorial

| Type | diagram | finite subgroups of $S U(2)$ | simple Lie group |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $A_{n}$ |  | $\mathbb{Z}_{n+1}$ | $S U(n+1)$ |
| $D_{n}$ |  | $2 \mathbb{D}_{2(n-2)}$ | $S O(2 n), \operatorname{Spin}(2 n)$ |
| $E_{6}$ | $\cdots \cdot$ | $2 T$ | $E_{6}$ |
| $E_{7}$ | $\ldots!$ | $2 O$ | $E_{7}$ |
| $E_{8}$ | . . . | $2 I$ | $E_{8}$ |

Figure II.1: Dynkin diagrams
illustration of a singularity of type $A_{3}$. Each of the consequent $\mathbb{P}^{1}$ can be called a two-cycle. So, a singularity of type $A_{3}$ is one that, when completely resolved, has a configuration of $A_{3}$. Similarly, a singularity of a certain Dynkin diagram has the blown-up configuration of that diagram. We have seen that the 2 -cycles $\mathbb{P}^{1}$ directly relate to the smoothing of singularities. We can use the volume of the 2-cycles to parametrize the resolutions. Such a method of

## Singular point <br> First blow-up <br> Second blow-up



Figure II.2: An $A_{3}$ type singularity being fully resolved will have a configuration of three Riemann spheres $\mathbb{P}^{1}(\mathbb{C})$ which intersect according to $A_{3}$ Dynkin diagram. Note that every two spheres intersect at most at one point transversely.
smoothly parametrizing the blowing-up is called deformation.

# CHAPTER III Physics Background 

The complete formulation of M-theory is still difficult to put together. Most of our inspiration and understanding about M-theory comes from the web of string dualities. In this chapter, we will briefly introduce this web as well as a dictionary for mapping the geometric objects between the theories. From this duality, we see that M-theory should be compactified on a $G_{2}$ manifold with ADE singularities. All of this discussion is strongly correlated with the mathematical tools in Chapter II. All materials here can be found in standard textbooks such as [111, 87].

## III.1: Brief overview of the Standard Model

The Standard Model (SM) of particle physics is so far the most successful theory describing the three fundamental forces (the electromagnetic, weak, and strong interactions, while excluding gravity) governing our world. It will help frame our discussion to briefly describe some key features of SM and the known experimental results. All unified theories, including the M theory of our interest, must at least achieve the established success of SM to be considered a physical candidate.

One key structure of SM is gauge symmetry. In general, a gauge symmetry of a physics theory is a symmetry where all the elements in the same "gauge" orbit of the symmetry will correspond to the same physical state. In order words, the theory is unchanged under the action of its gauge symmetry. We encounter many forms of gauge symmetry in different places, but notably, in SM, the gauge symmetry is a symmetry of the fields describing the elementary particles. The gauge group of SM is

$$
\begin{equation*}
S U(3) \times S U(2) \times U(1) \tag{III.1.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

This is a local symmetry, meaning its action on the fields is local. All the fields under the same orbit of this action describe the same particle. Therefore, the particles are characterized
by the representations and charges of the gauge group.
Note that global symmetry is just a specific case of local symmetry with uniform global action. In SM physics, we use gauge group to exclusively refer to the group in III.1.1. The global symmetry in SM is the isometry group of the Minkowski spacetime, which is called the Poincaré group. The Poincaré group is a semidirect product of translations and the Lorentz group

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbb{R}^{1,3} \rtimes O(1,3) \tag{III.1.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

where the Lorentz group $O(1,3)$ is the rotation group of the Minkowski spacetime. We expect the physics is invariant under Poincaré action. So, the particles are also in representations of this group. In the string/M theory description, we will see that gauge symmetry is incorporated into spacetime symmetry through singularities.

One big class of elementary particles is fermions, including quarks (up, charm, top, down, strange, bottom), leptons (electron, moun, tau, electron neutrino, moun neutrino, tau neutrino), and their antiparticles ${ }^{1}$. Fermionic fields are spinor fields on spacetime, so fermions split into the two irreducible spin representations of the Lorentz group, which are identified with "left-handed" and "right-handed" fermions. The fermions with different handedness usually transform in a different representation of the gauge group. Table III. 1 gives a list of all SM fermions and their representations and charges under the gauge group.

Besides fermions, there is another class of particles called bosons. They are tensorial fields on spacetime. At rank 0, we have two Higgs fields $H^{u}$ and $H^{d}$ as scalar fields which transform trivially under the Lorentz group. The Higgses transform as $(\mathbf{1}, \mathbf{2})$ of $S U(3) \times S U(2)$ with $U(1)$ charge 3 and -3 respectively. These fields are responsible for breaking electroweak symmetry $(S U(2) \times U(1)$ factor $)$ and giving mass the fermions. At rank 1, we have a vector representation of the Lorentz group. This associates with gauge bosons whose fields are vector fields on spacetime with values in the Lie algebra of the gauge group. They act as mediators for the fundamental forces. The list stops here for SM. In string/M theories, we will see graviton bosons in the rank 2 tensor representation.

Another ingredient of SM is the framework of Lagrangians. This is an extension of Lagrangians from classical mechanics to quantum field theory. We will not devote too much time on this besides noting a few key features to recognize in a Lagrangian. First, if $\phi$ (or $\psi$ ) is a bosonic (or fermionic field), then a term in the quadratic form $m^{2} \phi^{2}$ (or $m \psi \bar{\psi}$ ) is called a mass term for the particle with mass $m$, This can be generalized in to $n$ different fields in the form $m_{i j}^{2} \phi_{i} \phi_{j}$ (or $m_{i j} \psi_{i} \bar{\psi}_{j}$ ) where the masses are eigenvalues of $m_{i j}$, and the eigenvectors

[^2]|  | $S U_{3}$ | $S U_{2}$ | $U(1)$ |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $Q_{1}$ | $\mathbf{3}$ | $\mathbf{2}$ | 1 |
| $Q_{2}$ | $\mathbf{3}$ | $\mathbf{2}$ | 1 |
| $Q_{3}$ | $\mathbf{3}$ | $\mathbf{2}$ | 1 |
| $u_{1}$ | $\mathbf{3}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | 4 |
| $u_{2}$ | $\mathbf{3}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | 4 |
| $u_{3}$ | $\mathbf{3}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | 4 |
| $d_{1}$ | $\mathbf{3}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | -2 |
| $d_{2}$ | $\mathbf{3}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | -2 |
| $d_{3}$ | $\mathbf{3}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | -2 |
| $L_{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{2}$ | -3 |
| $L_{2}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{2}$ | -3 |
| $L_{3}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{2}$ | -3 |
| $e_{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | 6 |
| $e_{2}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | 6 |
| $e_{3}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | 6 |

Table III.1: SM fermions without conjugates where $Q_{i}$ 's are left-handed quarks, $u_{i}$ 's and $d_{i}$ 's are right-handed up-type (up, charm, top) and down-type (down, strange, bottom) quarks, $L_{i}$ 's are left-handed leptons, $e_{i}$ 's are charged right-haned leptons (electron, moun, tau). Notice that the right handed neutrinos $\nu_{i}$ are not here because we are not sure if they exist. If they do, they will transform in the $(\mathbf{1}, \mathbf{1})$ representation of $S U(3) \times S U(2)$ with 0 charge under $U(1)$.
are called mass eigenstates. At cubic level, we have terms called Yukawa couplings, most commonly of the form $Y_{i j k} \psi_{i} \bar{\psi}_{j} \phi_{k}$ where the scalar $Y_{i j k}$ is called a Yukawa coupling strength, or, just a Yukawa coupling. $Y_{i j k}$ determines the strength of the interaction between two fermions $\psi_{i}$ and $\psi_{j}$ and a scalar $\phi$. Similarly, any term in the Lagrangian signifies an interaction between the particles present in that term. However, not every combination is allowed in the Lagrangian. As a Lagrangian is required to be invariant under both gauge symmetry and Lorentz symmetry, for each term in the Lagrangian, the tensor product of its fields must contain a singlet, i.e, the trivial representation for all the symmetry groups.

It is believed that supersymmetry is essential for solving many problems in physics. It acts as a symmetry between bosonic and fermionic particles. One of the original inspirations for supersymmetry was to solve the quadratically divergent contributions to the Higgs mass in the Standard Model by automatic cancellations between fermionic and bosonic Higgs interactions. If restored at the weak scale, supersymmetry eventually explains the large discrepancy between aspects of the weak force and gravity. Another motivation of supersymmetry is toward grand unification where we expect the gauge group to unify at high energy. Gauge coupling constants do not quite intersect at high energy in the Standard Model, but with supersymmetry, they do at approximately $10^{16} \mathrm{GeV}$ which we call the GUT
scale. Given that, we want an extension to the Standard Model that realizes supersymmetry. Such an extension with the minimum amount of particles while staying consistent with the empirical results is called the Minimal Supersymmetric Standard Model (MSSM). In the following M theory construction, we hope to reduce to MSSM in an appropriate limit in order to be consistent with phenomenology.

## III.2: String theories

## 5 string theories with a web of dualities. See Figure III. 1

- The most natural compactifitication is on Calabi-Yau due to supersymmetry.
- M-theory compactified on a circle $S^{1}$ and $S^{1} / \mathbb{Z}_{2}$ reduces to Type IIA and heterotic $E_{8} \times E_{8}$ respectively.


Figure III.1: String duality
There are five superstring theories that are connected by a web of dualities. All of them seem to be a limit of a non-perturbative theory called M-theory. We will briefly look over all of the string theories, as it will be useful for the later discussion of M-theory Moreover, as discussed in the previous section, it is sensible to consider string theories with supersymmetry. Such theories are called superstring theories. All discussion here will be
implicitly understood as superstring.
The original string theories without supersymmetry are called bosonic string theories. As the name suggests, they contain only a bosonic spectrum. Conformal symmetry of the world sheet ${ }^{2}$ requires bosonic string theories to be 26 dimensional. For the superstring, the local symmetries on the world sheet are enhanced from the ordinary conformal group to the $\mathcal{N}=1$ superconformal group with new (fermionic) generators. This new symmetry group reduces the appropriate dimension of the theory to 10 .

There is a subtlety about supersymmetry in string theory. There technically are two types of supersymmetry: worldsheet ${ }^{3}$ supersymmetry and spacetime supersymmetry. Worldsheet supersymmetry is the symmetry of the worldsheet Ramond-Neveu-Schwarz (RNS) action under the worldsheet supersymmetry transformations. It is a symmetry of the classical action of the superstring. It is noteworthy that writing down a worldsheet action will automatically result in worldsheet supersymmetry. On the other hand, we have spacetime supersymmetry. While writing down a minimal supersymmetric gravity theory, we naturally arrive at a symmetry between tensor fields (including the metrics) and spinor fields. As each well-defined supersymmetric transformation requires an invariant spinor, the spacetime supersymmetry directly relates to the holonomy of the spacetime. There is a difference between the two concepts. As string theories are perturbative theories around a fixed spacetime background, the worldsheet symmetry is in fact local supersymmetry. In contrast, if the holonomy of the global spacetime allows invariant spinors, the corresponding spacetime supersymmetry is global. In supergravity theories which are low energy limit of string theories, the GSO projection ${ }^{4}$ matches the two types of supersymmetry precisely. This boils down to a consequence of unitarity ${ }^{5}$.

As our world is visibly 4 spacetime dimensional. 10d string theories need to be compactified on a small 6 dimensional manifold, which is called internal space. Supersymmetry requires that the 6 dimensional manifold has one invariant spinor. From the previous chapter, this is exactly the condition for a Calabi-Yau manifold. Explicitly, all of the five superstring theories are of the form $R^{3,1} \times X$ where supersymmetry implies $X$ to be 6d Calabi-Yau.

We perform a KK compactification for the bosonic fields and complete them to $4 \mathrm{~d} \mathcal{N}=$ 2 supermultiplets, which corresponds to two invariant spinors as classified in Chapter II. Depending on the content of the theory, some of these supersymmetric completion does not present in the theory, hence the theory may reduce to smaller supersymmetry. We have five possible string theories:

[^3]Type II theories are theories of closed oriented strings. They describe the free propagation of strings in spacetime, and the fields obey the 2d wave equation. The worldsheet theory is split into left and right moving sectors. In Type IIA, they have opposite chirality. In type IIB, they have the same chirality. There are equal contributions from left-moving and right-moving sectors, so the supersymmetry is $\mathcal{N}=2$ as above general completion [61].

Heterotic string theories have two different algebras acting on the left and right movers. For phenomenological interest, the only option is a left-moving bosonic string sector (acted on by the usual Poincairé algebra) and a right-moving superstring sector (acted on by the supersymmetric algebra). There are only two possible gauge groups: either $E_{8} \times E_{8}$ or $S O(32)$, hence the names. These possible gauge groups can be deduced in different ways. Notably, hexagon gravitational anomaly cancellation through the Green-Schwarz mechanism is only possible for these two gauge groups [45].

Type I theory is a theory of both open and closed unoriented strings. It is consistent only for the gauge group $S O(32)$. The right-movers and left movers are related by the open string boundary condition and transform under the same spacetime supersymmetry.

It is also noteworthy to recall that in compactification, open string endpoints are restricted to lie on subspaces. These subspaces are called D-branes. p-dimensional D-branes are called Dp-branes. Mathematically, these branes plus one temporal dimension are presented as integrating subspaces for differential forms. For example, a D2-brane evolving in time will sweep out a $3 \mathrm{~d} W_{3}$ subspace, and in fact, appears in an effective Lagrangian as $Q \int_{W_{3}} C_{3}$ where $C_{3}$ is a differential 3 form. We say $C_{3}$ electrically charges the D 2 -brane with charge $Q$.

The background in this section can be found in more detail in standard string theory textbooks $[111,87]$ unless stated explicitly. In the following sections, we will try to illustrate some key features of string duality. This will help understand the lift of all string theories' results to M theory. In standard literature, M theory directly duals with type IIA and $E_{8} \times E_{8}$ heterotic string theories. The rest of the web is connected to M theory indirectly through those two string theories. Although there are several works directly dualizing M theory and the rest of the web [75, 32], in the following section we will follow the standard route. We will see that the field contents of type IIA and M theory locally are identical in low energy. The nonabelian gauge in M theory is inspired by the lift from IIA theory. Some other dualities will be briefly mentioned to give an intuition about how these are connected to M theory.

## III.3: Type IIA on Calabi Yau

The bosonic fields for 10d type IIA string theory are the graviton $G$, the NS-NS 2-form $B^{6}$, the dilaton $\phi$, and the R-R 1-form $A_{1}{ }^{7}$ and the 3-form $C_{3}$. Compactified on a Calabi-Yau manifold, their KK reductions, shown in Table III.2, are a gravity multiplet containing a graviton $G_{\mu \nu}$ and a graviphoton $A_{\mu}, h_{1,1}$ vector multiplets containing a gauge boson $C_{i \bar{j} \mu}$ and a complex scalar $B_{i \bar{j}}{ }^{8}$, and $h_{2,1}+1$ hypermultiplets containing two complex scalars. Here $i, j$ are internal space indices, and $\mu, \nu$ are non-compact 4 d spacetime indices.

| IIA |  | Gravity | $h_{1,1}$ Vector | $h_{2,1}$ Hyper | Hyper |
| :---: | :--- | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $G$ | $\rightarrow$ | $G_{\mu \nu}$ | $h_{1,1}$ Kähler | $2 h_{2,1}$ Cmplx.Str. |  |
| $B$ | $\rightarrow$ |  | $B_{i \bar{j}}$ |  | $B_{\mu \nu}$ |
| $\phi$ | $\rightarrow$ |  |  |  |  |
| $A_{1}\left(\right.$ or $\left.C_{1}\right)$ | $\rightarrow$ | $A_{\mu}$ |  |  | $\phi$ |
| $C_{3}$ | $\rightarrow$ |  | $C_{i \bar{j} \mu}$ | $C_{i j \bar{k}}, C_{\bar{i} \bar{j} k}$ | $C_{i j k}, C_{\bar{i} \bar{j} \bar{k}}$ |

Table III.2: Type IIA field content in 4d

## III.4: Type IIB on Calabi Yau

The bosonic fields for 10d type IIB string theory are the graviton $G$, the NSNS 2-form $B$, the dilaton $\phi$, the RR 0-form $a$, 2-form $C_{2}$, and 4-form $C_{4}$ (with self-dual field strength). Compactified on a Calabi-Yau manifold, their KK reductions are given in Table III.3.

## III.5: Duality between type II theories

## III.5.1: T-duality

In the simplest model, 10d type II string theories can be compactified to 9 d on a circle $S^{1}$ of radius $R$. The circle compactifications of type IIA and IIB can be shown to have the same massless spectrum. This is a manifestation of T-duality. This duality relates two theories compactified on radii $R$ and $R^{\prime}=\frac{\alpha^{\prime}}{R}$. However, it is intriguing that the duality cross-maps

[^4]| IIA |  | Gravity | $h_{2,1}$ Vector | $h_{1,1}$ Hyper | Hyper |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
|  |  |  |  |  |  |
| $G$ | $\rightarrow$ | $G_{\mu \nu}$ | $2 h_{2,1}$ Cmplx.Str. | $h_{1,1}$ Kähler |  |
| $B$ | $\rightarrow$ |  | $B_{i \bar{j}}$ |  | $B_{\mu \nu}$ |
| $\phi$ | $\rightarrow$ |  |  |  |  <br> $a$ |
| $C_{2}$ | $\rightarrow$ |  |  |  | $a$ |
| $C_{3}$ | $\rightarrow$ | $C_{i j k \mu}$ | $C_{i j \bar{k} \mu}$ | $C_{i \bar{j}}$ | $C_{\mu \nu}$ |
|  |  |  |  |  |  |

Table III.3: Type IIB field content in 4d
non-trivially different types of states between the the theories. For instance, the chirality is flipped for some states. We can see this effect in instanton later as well. The instanton effect for Yukawa coupling emerges as a field theory result for type IIB, but as a stringy effect for type IIA.

## III.5.2: Mirror symmetry

Roughly speaking, mirror symmetry is that for every Calabi Yau manifold $\mathbf{X}_{6}$, there exists a mirror Calabi Yau manifold $\mathbf{Y}_{6}$ so that:

$$
\begin{equation*}
h_{1,1}\left(\mathrm{X}_{\mathbf{6}}\right)=h_{2,1}\left(\mathrm{Y}_{\mathbf{6}}\right) \quad h_{2,1}\left(\mathrm{X}_{\mathbf{6}}\right)=h_{1,1}\left(\mathrm{Y}_{\mathbf{6}}\right) \tag{III.5.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

The content of type IIA string theory on one Calabi Yau manifold is exactly the same content of type IIB string theory compactified on the mirrored manifold. One can think of mirror symmetry as a generalization of T-duality. In T-duality, type IIA compactified on a circle with radius $R$ is equivalent to type IIB compactified on a circle with radius (proportional to) $1 / R$. It implies that the limit of one theory is the other theory. Moreover, field theory description of one theory (for instance, momentum states) may have a stringy origin in the mirror (winding states).

## III.6: U-duality - M-theory and type IIA duality

At the strong coupling limit $g_{s} \rightarrow \infty$, type IIA theory behaves similarly to a theory with a decompactified dimension. In particular, it behaves like a theory on $M_{10} \times S^{1}$ where the radius $R$ of circle $S^{1}$ going to infinity. The full 11d theory is called M-theory. Notice that the radius limit is in fact a T-duality, and the strong coupling limit is an S-duality. S-duality is the duality between string theory at strong coupling and M theory at weak coupling. This
combination of T-duality and S-duality is called U-duality. This setup gives the first idea about the inspiration for M-theory.

M-theory has no dimensionless coupling constant. In the duality with type IIA, both the gauge coupling $g_{s}$ and string tension $\alpha^{\prime}$ of type IIA string theory become parts of the geometry. In particular, the M-theory $S^{1}$ radius $R$ is related to

$$
\begin{equation*}
g_{s}=\left(M_{11} R\right)^{3 / 2}, \quad \alpha^{\prime}=\frac{1}{M_{11}^{3} R} \tag{III.6.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $M_{11}$ is 11d Planck scale. Moreover, the type IIA metric, dilaton, and RR 1-form are all lifted to be parts of the metric in 11d. By KK reduction on a circle, we can connect the M-theory fields with IIA:

| M-theory | $\longrightarrow$ | IIA |  |
| :---: | :--- | :---: | :---: |
| $G_{M N}$ | $\longrightarrow$ | $G_{M N}$ | graviton |
| $G_{M, 10}$ | $\longrightarrow$ | $C_{1}$ | RR 1-form |
| $G_{10,10}$ | $\longrightarrow$ | $\phi$ |  |
| $C_{M N P}$ | $\longrightarrow$ | $C_{3}$ | RR 3-form |
| $C_{M N 10}$ | $\longrightarrow$ | $B_{2}$ | NSNS 2-form |

Table III.4: M-theory to IIA by KK reduction on $S^{1}$

And Table III. 5 gives a map between other objects of the theories

| IIA | $\longleftrightarrow$ | M-theory on $S^{1}$ |
| :---: | :---: | :---: |
| D0-branes | $\longleftrightarrow$ | KK momenta of 11d supergravitons |
| IIA strings | $\longleftrightarrow$ | M2 wrapped on $S^{1}$ |
| D2 | $\longleftrightarrow$ | unwrapped M2 |
| D4 | $\longleftrightarrow$ | M5 wrapped on $S^{1}$ |
| NS5 | $\longleftrightarrow$ | unwrapped M5 |
| D6 | $\longleftrightarrow$ | Kaluza-Klein monopole |

Table III.5: IIA and M-theory on $S^{1}$ duality

## III.7: Nonabelian gauge theories in string theories

## First hint about nonabelian gauge in M-theory:

- In type IIA, a stack of coincident $n$ D-branes gives rise to a $\mathbf{U}(\mathbf{n})$ gauge group
- Lifted to M-theory, a $A_{n-1}$ singularity gives rise to a $\mathrm{SU}(\mathrm{n})$ gauge group


## III.7.1: Coincident D-branes in string theories

We always have plenty of abelian $U(1)$ gauge symmetries from the vector bosonic fields. Note the fact that anytime we have a bosonic vector field, we have an abelian $U(1)$ gauge.

Realizing nonabelian gauge symmetry is more tricky. Consider a bosonic string stretching between two D-branes. The mass of the state is proportional to the distance between the two D-branes. So when the two D-branes coincide, the state becomes massless. This provides two massless bosons, corresponding to two strings connecting the two D-branes in two opposite orientations, which is a hint that gauge symmetry can be enhanced. In general, if we have a stack of $n$ D-branes, there are $n^{2}$ possible beginning and end for a string. When the $n$ D-branes coincide, there are then $n^{2}$ states corresponding to the same physical state. This implies a gauge symmetry. All the field components in the theory are promoted to $n \times n$ matrices, and the action is a trace of $n \times n$ matrices. This describes a $U(n)$ gauge symmetry.

## III.7.2: The extension to M-theory

- $n$ coincident branes become $n$ shrinking 2 -spheres in M theory which make an $A_{n-1}$ type of $A D E$ singularities.
- All topologically relevant harmonic forms, corresponding to Cartan generators, must become compactly supported.
- Although there are $n$ harmonic forms corresponding to $n$ Cartan generators of $U(n)$ from $n$ coincident branes, only $n-1$ of them can become compactly supported, and hence reduce the gauge group to $S U(n)$.
- This disappearing $U(1)$ means that while $n$ D-branes have no specific orders in type IIA, the 2 -spheres have a specific ordering in $M$ theory
$n$ coincident branes in a string theory produce a non-abelian gauge group $U(N)=$ $S U(N) \times U(1)$. We can examine the analog of this in the M-theory limit. Here, a string in IIA is lifted to a 2 brane called a M2 brane. A stack of $n$ D-branes is lifted to n-2 M2 branes wrapping a n-1 Riemannian spheres ${ }^{9}$ that intersect transversely in a configuration of the type $A_{n}$ Dynkin diagram. Consequently, $n$ coincident D-branes are lifted to shrinking those spheres to a point. Geometrically, this is an ADE singularity of $A_{n}$ type. An explicit example can be seen in the construction of Taub-NUT geometry ${ }^{10}$. This geometry considers a spacetime of the form $M_{7} \times X_{4}$, with a non-compact $X_{4}$ asymptotic to $\mathbb{R}^{3} \times S^{1}$, with the $\mathbb{R}^{3}$ transverse to the D-branes and the M-theory compactification circle $S^{1}$ (see Figure III.2).


Figure III.2: Taub-NUT geometry with four D-branes transverse to four points $x_{a}$ on $\mathbb{R}^{3}$. The $S^{1}$ fibration creates three 2-spheres in M theory.

The Taub-Nut metric is of the form

$$
\begin{array}{r}
d s^{2}=\frac{V(\vec{x})}{4} d \vec{x}^{2}+\frac{V(\vec{x})^{-1}}{4}\left(d x^{10}+\vec{\omega} \cdot d \vec{x}\right)^{2}, \\
V(\vec{x})=1+\sum_{a=1}^{N} \frac{1}{\left|\vec{x}-\vec{x}_{a}\right|}, \quad \vec{\nabla} \times \vec{\omega}=\vec{\nabla} V(\vec{x}) \tag{III.7.2}
\end{array}
$$

where $\vec{X}$ parametrize $\mathbb{R}^{3}$ and $\vec{\omega}$ is formally the 3 d vector potential for $n$ Dirac monopoles at $n$ locations $\vec{x}_{a}$ on $\mathbb{R}^{3}$. This is called the $n$-center Taub-NUT metric, or the Kaluza-Klein

[^5]monopole. The D-branes are located transversely to $\mathbb{R}^{3}$ at the locations $\overrightarrow{x_{a}}$. The $S^{1}$ fibration degenerates into a point at the $\overrightarrow{x_{a}}$, so the $S^{1}$ fibration between two consecutive $\overrightarrow{x_{a}}$ 's creates a 2 -sphere which is mentioned in the previous paragraph. Intergrating over $S^{1}$ will then reduce the $M_{2}$ branes wrapping these 2-spheres to strings stretching between D-branes at the $\overrightarrow{x_{a}}$ 's.

Interestingly, the analog in M-theory limit is $S U(N)$ with some subtlety about the disappearing $U(1)$. First, note that there exist $n$ harmonic, normalizable two-forms, call them $\omega_{i}$. These forms are localized near the centers of the Taub-NUT space, and they are the cohomological forms dual to the $n$ non-trivial homology cycles (the spheres from earlier). Furthermore, there is one additional normalizable 2-form on the Taub-NUT geometry, which can be constructed explicitly for $n=0$, but which does not relate to any particular topological property [78], which will be explained later.

The existence of normalizable harmonic 2-forms in a multi-center Taub-NUT geometry is a nontrivial fact. The explicit form of these forms may be found in $[118,116]$, who gives them

$$
\begin{align*}
\omega_{i} & =d \xi_{i}  \tag{III.7.3}\\
\xi_{i} & =V^{-1} V_{i}\left(d x^{10}+\omega \cdot d x\right)-\omega_{i} d x \tag{III.7.4}
\end{align*}
$$

where $V_{i}=\frac{m}{\vec{x}-\overrightarrow{x_{i}}}$ and the exterior derivative in Eq. (III.7.3) is only meant to work as the derivative on the coordinates of Taub-NUT space that are not $x^{10}$.
$\omega^{0}$ does not have a topological impact because it's not associated with the basis of 2-cycles that arises from the lines between the center of the Taub-NUT monopoles. The tricky part is the duality of cohomology and homology. Poincaré duality of these $n-1$ cycles gives us only n-1 compactly supported (and hence normalizable) modes. Note also that these modes are not the $\omega_{i}$ from Eq. (III.7.3), since although normalizable, they are not compactly supported. Now, $\omega^{0}$ is an additional normalizable mode that does not appear through Poincaré duality, while the rest of the normalizable modes have compactly supported versions we can see through the homological argument.

Conveniently, this explains a missing $U(1)$ between M-theory of gauge enhancement and the type IIa $D_{6}$-brane gauge enhancement. In a more geometric perspective, we see that $n$ D-branes have no particular order in type IIA, but in Taub-NUT geometry, there is a specific order of them at $\overrightarrow{x_{a}}$ 's. This ordering reduces the $U(N)$ to $S U(N)$.

Finally, it is noteworthy that $A_{n}$ and $D_{n}$ type singularities in M theory can descend down to type IIA string theory $[34,88]$. We will not go deeper into details as we get what we need for our M theory description.

## III.8: Heterotic string theories

For completeness, we briefly mention the the heterotic string theories and their duality to M theory. One can use this duality to realize $E_{n}$ type of ADE singularity in M theory [107] although we will not cover that here. The 10d massless fields of the heterotic theory are the $10 \mathrm{~d} \mathcal{N}=1$ gravity multiplet (whose bosonic content is the metric $G_{M N}$, the 2 -form $B_{M N}$, and the dilaton $\phi$ ) and the $10 \mathrm{~d} \mathcal{N}=1$ vector multiplets (with bosonic content given by the gauge bosons $A_{M}^{a}$ ). The difference between the $E_{8} \times E_{8}$ and $S O(32)$ theories is just in the group theory of $A_{M}^{a}$ under spacetime gauge symmetry. The KK reduction on a CY manifold for the gravity multiplet is

| Het |  | Gravity | $h_{1,1}$ Chiral | $h_{2,1}$ Chiral | Chiral |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $G$ | $\longrightarrow$ | $g_{\mu \nu}$ | $h_{1,1}$ Kähler | $2 h_{2,1}$ Cmplx. Str. |  |
| $B$ | $\longrightarrow$ |  | $B_{i \bar{j}}$ |  | $B_{\mu \nu}$ |
| $\phi$ | $\longrightarrow$ |  |  |  | $\phi$ |

Table III.6: Heterotic string theory 4d content

The vector multiplet is decomposed differently depending on the type of compactification. This is because there are many ways to break the gauge group. We will omit the details due to limited space.

## III.9: U duality - M-theory and heterotic string

Another way of compactifying M-theory to 10 d , besideson an $S^{1}$, is over the quotient $S^{1} / Z_{2}$. This turns out to be a strong coupling limit $g_{s} \rightarrow \infty$ of heterotic string $E_{8} \times E_{8}$. Consider the compactification of M-theory on a circle $S^{1}$, modded out by a $Z_{2}$ action whose generator $\theta$ behaves as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\theta: x^{10} \rightarrow-x^{10}, \quad C_{3} \rightarrow-C_{3} \tag{III.9.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

This compactification of M-theory leads to a $10 \mathrm{~d} \mathcal{N}=1$ gravity multiplet, arising from the $Z_{2}$ invariant fields of M-theory in the 11 d bulk, in addition to $10 \mathrm{~d} \mathcal{N}=1 E_{8} \times E_{8}$ vector multiplets, each factor propagating on each 10 d boundary of spacetime. This is called Hor̆ava-Witten theory. It has exactly the same massless spectrum as the $E_{8} \times E_{8}$ heterotic theory. Furthermore, the effective supergravity is identical in both M-theory on $S^{1}$ and heterotic string, with $S^{1}$ radius related to heterotic coupling as $g_{s}=\left(M_{11} R\right)^{3 / 2}$.

With some subtlety, the KK reduction of M-theory to heterotic string $E_{8} \times E_{8}$ is similar to that of type IIA.

## III.10: Other dualities

There are other dualities between string theories as shown in Figure III.1. The nature of these remaining dualities are S-duality and T-duality as covered in the previous sections [84, 77]. We will omit their discussion here as it does not have a direct consequence on our later work.

## III.11: Supergravity

As the name suggests, supergravity is a gravitational theory that obeys supersymmetry. There are many sensible supergravity theories in various dimensions. Notably, 10d supergravity theories and 11d supergravity are lower energy approximations of string and M theories respectively. In fact, when we consider only the massless modes of a string/M-theory, it is actually just supergravity. That is what we mean by the low energy approximation: only the massless spectrum is physical, as other heavy states do not have the required energy to exist. Every string theory has a corresponding 10d supergravity version. On the other hand, 11d supergravity is unique. For our purpose, we are mainly interested in 11d supergravity because it is the lower energy limit of M-theory. The supersymmetric condition suggests that 11d supergravity should be compactified on a $G_{2}$ manifold. This is the first clue that M-theory should be compactified on a $G_{2}$ manifold ${ }^{11}$.

## 11d Supergravity theory:

- Metric $g_{M N}$ and an antisymmetric tensor field $C_{M N P}$ as bosonic components.
- Gravitino $\Psi_{M}$, which is a Majorana spinor, as the fermionic superpartner of $g_{M N}$ and $C_{M N P}$.
- $G_{2}$ manifolds are the most natural way to compactify the theory.

[^6]The supergravity action can then be written as in [22, 55]
(III.11.1)

$$
\begin{array}{r}
S=\frac{1}{2} \int_{M_{11}} \sqrt{-g} d^{11} x\left[R-\bar{\Psi}_{M} \Gamma^{M N P} D_{N} \Psi_{P}-\frac{1}{2} F_{4} \wedge * F^{4}\right] \\
-\frac{1}{192} \int_{M_{11}} \sqrt{-g} d^{11} x \bar{\Psi}_{M} \Gamma^{M N P Q R S} \Psi_{N}\left(F_{4}\right)_{P Q R S}-\frac{1}{2} \int_{M_{11}} F_{4} \wedge * A_{4} \\
-\frac{1}{12} \int_{M_{11}} F_{4} \wedge F_{4} \wedge C_{3}
\end{array}
$$

where we have set the eleven-dimensional Newton's constant to unity and denoted

$$
\begin{array}{r}
\left(A_{4}\right)_{M N P Q}=3 \bar{\Psi}_{[M} \Gamma_{N P} \Psi_{Q]} \\
F_{4}=d C_{3} \tag{III.11.3}
\end{array}
$$

We use D for the spinor covariant derivative. The indices $M, N \cdots=0,1, \ldots, 10$ denote curved eleven-dimensional indices.

The spinor conjugation is defined to be $\bar{\Psi}_{M}=\Psi_{M}^{\dagger} \Gamma^{0}$, We have ignored the four fermionic terms, which play no role in our analysis, and kept only bilinear terms in the gravitino field $\Psi_{M}$. The action (III.11.1) is invariant under the usual supersymmetry transformations.

Consider only the bosonic part [3],

$$
\begin{equation*}
S=\int \sqrt{-g} R-\frac{1}{2} F_{4} \wedge * F^{4}-\frac{1}{6} F_{4} \wedge F_{4} \wedge C_{3} \tag{III.11.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

The equations of motion for $C$ and $g$ are of the form,

$$
\begin{equation*}
d * F=F \wedge F \tag{III.11.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

and

$$
\begin{equation*}
R_{M N}-\frac{1}{2} g_{M N} R=T_{M N}(C) \tag{III.11.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $T$ is the energy-momentum tensor for the $C$-field, which is

$$
\begin{equation*}
T=-\frac{|F|^{2}}{4} g \tag{III.11.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

Since the theory is supersymmetric, it is natural to look for supersymmetric vacua. In
the classical theory these are just the conditions that the supersymmetry variations of the three fields vanish. In a Lorentz-invariant background the expectation value of $\Psi$ is zero, in which case the variations of $g$ and $C$ vanish automatically. In order to find classically supersymmetric field configurations, we must find values of $C$ and $g$ for which the variation of $\Psi$ is zero:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\delta_{n} \Psi_{M} \equiv \nabla_{M} \eta+\frac{1}{288}\left(\Gamma_{M}^{P Q R S} F_{P Q R S}-8 \Gamma^{P Q R} F_{M P Q R}\right) \eta=0 \tag{III.11.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

The simplest way to solve these equations is to take $F=0$ in which case we are looking for 11-manifolds with metric $g$ which admits a covariantly constant or parallel spinor:

$$
\begin{equation*}
\nabla_{M} \eta=0 \tag{III.11.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

We will rewrite this equation in the more symbolic form,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\nabla_{g} \eta=0 \tag{III.11.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

where by $\nabla_{g}$ we mean the Levi-Civita connection constructed from $g$. Solutions to these conditions can be classified via the holonomy group of the connection $\nabla_{g}$.

This implies that $\operatorname{Hol}(g(X))$ is $G_{2}$ or a subgroup. This is because $G_{2}$ is the maximal proper subgroup of $S O(7)$ under which the spinor representation contains a singlet (trivial representation). Specifically, a spinor of $S O(7)$ can be regarded as a fundamental of $G_{2}$ and a singlet of $G_{2}$ (which is in fact $\eta$ from above):

$$
\begin{equation*}
8 \rightarrow 7+1 \tag{III.11.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

Therefore if X is a compact manifold of precisely $G_{2}$-holonomy, the effective theory in four dimensions will be $\mathcal{N}=1$ supersymmetric. We get precisely $\mathcal{N}=1$ and no more because there is only one singlet spinor according to the above group theory.

## III.11.1: Supergravity - more details

As the 11d supergravity massless spectrum is exactly that of M-theory, the formulae in this section are actually useful in M-theory discussion

Table III.7: Summary of $\mathcal{N}=1$ supergravity multiplet. This decomposition is discussed more in Chapter IV.

| Indices | Massless 4d component fields |  | Massless 4d |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
|  | bosonic fields | fermionic fields | $\mathcal{N}=1$ multiplets |
|  | metric $g_{\mu \nu}$ | gravitno $\psi_{\mu}, \psi_{\mu}^{*}$ | gravity multiplet |
| $I=1, \ldots, b_{2}(Y)$ | vectors $A_{\mu}^{I}$ | gauginos $\lambda_{\alpha}^{I}$ | vector multiplets $V^{I}$ |
| $i=1, \ldots, b_{3}(Y)$ | scalars $\left(S^{i}, P^{i}\right)$ | spinors $\chi^{i}, \chi^{* i}$ | chiral multiplets $\Phi^{i}$ |

To perform the Kaluza-Klein reduction let us introduce the moduli-dependent volume $V_{Y}\left(S^{i}\right)$ of the $G_{2}$-manifold $Y$ given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
V_{Y}\left(S^{i}\right)=\int_{Y} d^{7} y \sqrt{\operatorname{det} g\left(S^{i}\right)_{m n}} \tag{III.11.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

Furthermore, we introduce a reference $G_{2}$-manifold $Y_{0}$ with respect to some background expectation values $S_{0}^{i}=\left\langle S^{i}\right\rangle$. As seen in Chapter II, this introduces a dimensionless (modulidependent) volume factor

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lambda_{0}\left(S^{i}\right)=\frac{V_{Y}\left(S^{i}\right)}{V_{Y_{0}}}=\frac{1}{7} \int_{Y} \varphi \wedge *_{g_{\varphi}} \varphi \tag{III.11.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

in terms of the reference volume $V_{Y_{0}}=V_{Y}\left(S_{0}^{i}\right)$. Here $\varphi$ is normalized by the choice of $Y_{0}$.

Then the dimensional reduction of the Einstein-Hilbert term and the $C$ term yields the 4-dimensional action [27]

$$
\begin{align*}
S_{4 d}^{b o s}= & \frac{1}{2 \kappa_{4}^{2}} \int\left[*_{4} R_{S}+\frac{\kappa_{I J k}}{2}\left(S^{k} F^{I} \wedge *_{4} F^{J}-P^{k} F^{I} \wedge F^{J}\right)\right. \\
& \left.-\frac{1}{2 \lambda_{0}} \int_{Y} \rho_{i}^{(3)} \wedge *_{g_{\varphi}} \rho_{j}^{(3)}\left(d P^{i} \wedge *_{4} d P^{j}+d S^{i} \wedge *_{4} d S^{j}\right)\right] \tag{III.11.14}
\end{align*}
$$

where $R_{S}$ is with respect to the metric $g_{\mu \nu}$. Here we perform the Weyl rescaling of the 4-dimensional metric

$$
\begin{equation*}
g_{\mu \nu} \rightarrow \frac{g_{\mu \nu}}{\lambda_{0}\left(S^{i}\right)} \tag{III.11.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

such that the 4 -dimensional cosntants are related by

$$
\begin{equation*}
\kappa_{4}^{2}=\frac{\kappa_{11}^{2}}{V_{Y_{0}}}=8 \pi G_{N}-8 \pi l_{P}^{2}=\frac{8 \pi}{M_{P}^{2}} \tag{III.11.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

Moreover, the coupling $\kappa_{I J k}$ arise from the topoloical intersection number

$$
\begin{equation*}
\kappa_{I J k}=\int_{Y} \omega_{I}^{(2)} \wedge \omega_{J}^{(2)} \wedge \rho_{k}^{(3)} . \tag{III.11.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

Notice that this is exactly the same as the overlapping integral we see later from type IIA and IIB theories in Sec. IV.4. We can now bring the (bosonic) action into the convential form of 4 -dimensional $\mathcal{N}=1$ supergravity [120] ${ }^{12}$. To identify chiral multiplets - that is to identify the complex structure of the Kähler terget space - we observe that at least to the leading order the action of the membrane instantons generating non-perturbative superpotential interactions is given by [82]

$$
\begin{equation*}
\phi^{i}=-P^{i}+i S^{i} \tag{III.11.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

Hence, due to holomorphy of the $\mathcal{N}=1$ superpotential, the complex fields $\phi^{i}$ furnish complex coordinates of the Kähler target space and thus represent the complex scalar fields in the $\mathcal{N}=1$ chiral multiplets $\Phi^{i}$. This allows us to read off the Käler potential and the gauge kinetic coupling [27, 100]

$$
\begin{align*}
K(\phi, \bar{\phi}) & =-3 \log \left(\frac{1}{7} \int_{Y} \varphi \wedge_{* g_{\varphi}} \varphi\right),  \tag{III.11.19}\\
f_{I J}(\phi) & =\frac{i}{2} \sum_{k} \phi^{k} \int_{Y} \omega_{I}^{(2)} \wedge \omega_{J}^{(2)} \wedge \rho_{k}^{(3)}=\frac{i}{2} \sum_{k} \kappa_{I J k} \phi^{k} . \tag{III.11.20}
\end{align*}
$$

The moduli space metric is then given by

$$
\begin{equation*}
g_{i \bar{j}}=\partial_{i} \partial_{\bar{j}} K=\frac{1}{4 \lambda_{0}} \int_{Y} \rho_{i}^{(3)} \wedge *_{g_{\phi}} \rho_{j}^{(3)} \tag{III.11.21}
\end{equation*}
$$

Note that the above result is merely from the semi-classical dimensional reduction of 11dimensional supergravity on the $G_{2}$ manifold $Y$. For the resulting $\mathcal{N}=1$ supersymmetric theory, one expects in general that the flat directions of the moduli space are lifted at the quantum level due to non-perturbative effects in M-theory [81]. We also generically expect additional non-perturbative superpotential contributions to arise from membrane instanton effects [2, 81].

[^7]
## CHAPTER IV <br> M-Theory on $G_{2}$ Manifold with ADE Singularities

## M-theory

- 11 d supergravity at low energy limit.
- Supersymmetry implies $G_{2}$ manifold.
- ADE singularity is required for nonabelian gauge group and light charged fermions.
- Nonpertubative limit of other string theories and more.
- Instanton effect gives the Yukawa coupling strength.

In Chapter III, we learned that M-theory is an 11d theory in strong coupling limit of string theories. All the features of string theories are lifted to M-theory, such as a nonabelian gauge group. We also see 11d supergravity is a low energy limit of M-theory which implies M-theory should be compactified on $G_{2}$ manifold. In fact, the geometric connection between M-theory and string theories can be traced down to the local relation of $G_{2}$ manifold and Calabi-Yau manifold in Chapter II. Additionally, the lifting of coincident D-branes from string theories tells us that M-theory with $A_{n}$ and $D_{n}$ type singularities can produce nonabelian gauge theories. It is natural to consider a generalized case of ADE singularities in the M -theory.

Furthermore, M-theory features can be generalized to structures that have no analog in string theories. For instance, $E_{n}$ singularities in M-theory have no analog in type IIA. More generally, the global geometry of $G_{2}$ manifolds can be much more than a trivial elliptical fibration of Calabi-Yau manifolds. As we see in Chapter III, all the tunable parameters such as coupling strength and string tension are part of the geometry, these non-trivial global constraints will potentially be much more predictive.

In this chapter, we will cover a few general aspects of M-theory compactified on $G_{2}$ manifold with ADE singularities. In Sec. IV.1, we look at the spectrum of M-theory on smooth
$G_{2}$ manifold through KK reduction in supergravity limit. This is indeed a continuation of the supergravity discussion in Chapter III. The gauge fields in this are all abelian, and the light fermions are uncharged. As a result, compactifying on singular $G_{2}$ manifolds is necessary.

## IV.1: Kalazu-Klein reduction on $G_{2}$ manifold

Kaluza-Klein reduction of 11-dimensional $\mathcal{N}=1$ supergravity provide the spectrum of low energy description of $M$ theory ${ }^{1}$. The degrees of freedom of the massless component fields in the gravity multiplet transform in the following irreducible representations of the little group $S O(9)$ : The metric $g_{M N}$ transforms in the traceless symmetric representation 44, the 3-form $C_{[M N P]}$ in the anti-symmetric 3-tensor representation 84, and the gravitino $\psi_{M}^{\alpha}$ in the representation $\mathbf{1 2 8}_{\mathbf{s}}$.

We now perform the Kazula-Klein reduction to 4 -dimensional Minkowski space $\mathbb{M}^{1,3}$

$$
\begin{equation*}
g(x, y)=\nabla_{\nu \mu} d x^{\nu} d y^{\mu}+g_{m n}(y) d y^{m} d y^{n} \tag{IV.1.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $x$ and $y$ are local coordinates of the $\mathbb{M}^{1,3}$ and the 7-dimensinal $G_{2}$-manifold $Y$.

Consider the infinitesimal fluctuation of the metric background $g \rightarrow \hat{g}+\delta \hat{g}$. Firstly, we obtain the 4 -d metric fluctuation $\delta g_{\mu \nu}$, which corresponds to the gravitational degrees of the 4-d low-energy effective theory. Secondly, since the fundamental group of $G_{2}$ manifold is finite, there are no massless gravitational Kazula-Klein vectors. Finally, we determine Kazula-Klein scalar $S^{i}$, which furnish coordinates on the moduli space of $G_{2}$-metrics. Consider infinitesimal deformation under $\delta S^{i}$, i.e.,

$$
\begin{equation*}
g_{m n} d y^{m} d y^{n} \rightarrow g_{m n}\left(S^{i}\right) d y^{m} d y^{n}+\sum_{i} \delta S^{i} \rho_{i,(m n)}^{s y m}\left(S^{i}\right) d y^{m} d y^{n} \tag{IV.1.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

The solving Einstein's equations to linear order in the symmetric metric fluctuations $\rho_{i,(m n)}^{\text {sym }}$, we obtain

$$
\begin{equation*}
\operatorname{Ric}\left(g+\sum \delta S^{i} \rho_{i}^{\text {sym }}\right)=0 \quad \Longrightarrow \quad \Delta_{L} \rho_{i}^{\text {sym }}=0 \tag{IV.1.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

in terms of the Lichnerowiz Laplacian $\Delta_{L}$ for the symmetric tensor fields. Recall Chapter II discussed the construction of Laplacian and the split of de Rham cohomology. Using the $G_{2}$

[^8]structure $\phi$ on $Y$, we construct the anti-symmetric 3-form tensors:
\[

$$
\begin{equation*}
\rho_{i,[m n p]}^{(3)}=g^{r s} \rho_{i,[m}^{s y m} \phi_{n p] s} . \tag{IV.1.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

\]

Remark IV.1. $\Delta_{L} \rho_{i}^{\text {sym }}=0$ if and only if $\Delta \rho_{i}^{(3)}=0$ [76].
Thus, the massless Kaluza-Klein scalars $S^{i}$ arise from the harmonic 3 -forms $\rho_{i}^{(3)}$, which represents a basis for the vector space $H^{3}(Y)$ of dimension $b_{3}(Y)$. Then, the harmonic 3 -forms $\rho_{i}^{(3)}$ are the first order deformations to the torsion-free $G_{2}$ structure

$$
\begin{equation*}
\phi\left(S^{i}\right) \rightarrow \phi\left(S^{i}\right)+\sum_{i} \delta S^{i} \phi\left(S^{i}\right) \tag{IV.1.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

At a given point $S^{i}$ in moduli space the harmonic 3-forms $\rho_{i}^{(3)}$ of $Y$ fall into representations of the structure group $G_{2}$, and $H^{3}(Y)$ splits as [89]
(IV.1.6) $\quad H^{3}(Y)=H_{\mathbf{1}}^{3}(Y) \oplus H_{\mathbf{2 7}}^{3}(Y), \quad \operatorname{dim} H_{\mathbf{1}}^{3}(Y)=1 \quad \operatorname{dim} H_{\mathbf{2 7}}^{3}(Y)=b_{3}(Y)-1$
where the 3 -form representative transform in the reppresentations $\mathbf{1}$ and $\mathbf{2 7}$ of $G_{2}$. The singlet corresponds to the scaling of volume of $Y$. The $\mathbf{2 7}$ corresponds to infinitesimal deformation with a constant volume at first order approximation.

In [89] Joyce shows that these infinitesimal deformations are actually unobstructed to all orders. The is to say that the vincity $U_{\phi\left(S^{i}\right)} \subset \mathcal{M}$ of a given torsion-free $G_{2}$-structure $\phi\left(S^{i}\right) \in \mathcal{M}$ - at a given point $S^{i}, i=1, \ddots, b_{3}(Y)$, in the moduli space - is locally diffeomorphic to the de Rham cohomology $H^{3}(Y)$, i.e,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathcal{P}_{\phi\left(S^{i}\right)}: U_{\phi\left(S^{i}\right)} \subset \mathcal{M} \rightarrow H^{3}(Y), \quad \phi \mapsto[\phi] . \tag{IV.1.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

We can locally expand the cohomology class $[\phi]$ as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left[\phi\left(S^{i}\right)\right]=\sum_{i} S^{i}\left[\rho_{i}^{(3)}\right] \tag{IV.1.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

which is a useful local description of the moduli space of $Y$.

Massless 4-dimensional modes arise from coefficients in the decomposition of the 11-
dimensional anti-symmetric 3-form tensor $\hat{C}$ as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{C}(x, y)=\sum_{I} A^{I}(x) \wedge \omega_{I}^{(2)}(y)+\sum_{I} P^{i}(x) \wedge \rho^{(3)}(y) \tag{IV.1.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

in terms of the harmonic 2-forms $\omega_{I}^{(2)}$ and 3-forms $\rho_{i}^{(3)}$ identified with non-trivial cohomology representatives of $H^{2}(Y)$ and $H^{3}(Y)$ of dimension $b_{2}(Y)$ and $b_{3}(Y)$ respectively. The 4dimensional vectors $A^{I}, I=1,{ }^{\bullet} \cdot, b_{2}(Y)$, and the 4 -dimensional scalars $P^{i}, i=1, \ddots, b_{3}(Y)$, are the only massless modes obtained.

Let us now do the dimensional reduction of the 11-dimensional gravitino $\hat{\psi}$, which geometrically is a section of $T^{*} M^{1,10} \otimes S M^{1,10}$, where $S M^{1,10}$ denotes a spin bundle of $M^{1,10}$.

$$
\begin{equation*}
\hat{\Psi}(x, y)=\left(\psi_{\mu}(x) d x^{\mu}+\psi_{\mu}^{*}(x) d x^{\mu}\right) \zeta(y)+\left(\chi(x)+\chi^{*}(x)\right) \zeta_{n}^{(1)}(y) d y^{n} \tag{IV.1.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

Here $\left(\psi_{\mu}, \psi_{m} u^{*}\right)$ and $\left(\chi, \chi^{*}\right)$ are 4-dimensional Rarita-Schwinger and spinor fields of both chiralities in $\mathbb{M}^{1,3}$. $\zeta$ is a chapter of real spin bundle $S Y$. Furthermore, $\zeta^{(1)}$ is a chapter of the real Rarita-Schwinger bundle $T^{*} Y \otimes S Y$, which is locally takes the form $\theta^{(1)} \otimes \tilde{\zeta}$ in terms of the local 1-form $\theta^{(1)}$ and the spinorial chapter $\tilde{\zeta}$.

On $G_{2}$-manifold the spin bundle splits as $S Y \approx T^{*} Y \oplus \mathbb{R}[89]$ such that the chapter $\zeta$ decompose accordingly

$$
\begin{equation*}
\zeta=\sum_{m} a_{m}(y) \gamma^{m} \eta+b(y) \eta \tag{IV.1.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

Here, $\eta$ is the covariantly constant Majorana spinor of the $G_{2}$-manifold and $\gamma^{m}$ are the 7dimensional gamma matrices. Similarly, we decompose the Rarita-Schwinger chapter $\zeta^{(1)}$ of $T^{*} Y \otimes S Y$

$$
\begin{equation*}
\zeta^{(1)}=\sum_{n, m} a_{(n m)}^{28}(y) d y^{n} \otimes \gamma^{m} \eta+\sum_{n, m} a_{[n m]}^{14}(y) d y^{n} \otimes \gamma^{m} \eta+\sum_{n} b_{n}^{7}(y) d y^{n} \otimes \eta \tag{IV.1.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

The superscripts in the symmetric tensor $a_{(n m)}^{28}(y)$, the anti-symmetric tensor $a_{[n m]}^{14}(y)$, and the vector $b_{n}^{7}(y)$ indicate the dimension of their respective representations with respect to the structure group $G_{2}$.

The massless 4-dimensional fermionic spectrum results from zero modes of the 7-dimensional

Dirac operator $\not D$ and Rarita-Schwinger operator $\not D^{\mathrm{RS}}$

$$
\begin{equation*}
\not D \zeta=0 \quad \not D^{\mathrm{RS}} \zeta^{(1)}=0 \tag{IV.1.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

The zero modes of these operators on $G_{2}$-manifolds are discussed in [67]. For the spinorial chapter $\zeta$, the covariantly constant spinor $\eta$ - i.e, $b(y) \equiv 1$ - is the only zero mode of the Dirac operator. In the Rarita-Schwinger chapter $\zeta^{(1)}$, the 1 -form tensor $b^{7}(y)$ does not contribute any zero modes. All zero modes arise from the zero modes of the Lichnerowicz Laplacian and the 2-form Laplacian acting respectively on $a^{28}(y)$ and $a^{14}(y)$

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Delta_{L} a^{28}(y)=0 \quad \Delta a^{14}(y)=0 \tag{IV.1.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

The zero modes of the Lichnerowicz Laplacian on $G_{2}$-manifolds are again identified with hamonic 3-forms - with a singlet zero mode and $b_{3}(Y)$ - 1 traceless symmetric zero modes transforming in the $G_{2}$-representations 1 and $\mathbf{2 7}$, respectively. Therefore, the zero modes of the Rarita-Schwinger bundle on $Y$ are in one-to-one correspondence with non-trivial cohomology elements of both $H^{3}(Y)$ and $H^{2}(Y)$, and we arrive at the expansion of the 4dimensional chiral fermions

$$
\begin{equation*}
\chi(x) \zeta^{(1)}(y)=\sum_{i=1}^{b_{3}(Y)} \chi^{i}(x) \rho_{i,(n m)}^{s y m} d y^{n} \otimes \gamma^{m} \eta+\sum_{I=1}^{b_{2}(Y)} \lambda^{I} \omega_{I,[n m]}^{(2)} d y^{n} \otimes \gamma^{m} \eta \tag{IV.1.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

in terms of the bases of zero modes $\rho_{i,(n m)}^{s y m}$ of the Lichnerowicz Laplacian and of the harmonic 2 -forms $\omega_{I}^{(2)}$.

Notice that all the bosonic vector fields are Abelian. Moreover, all the fermionic fields are uncharged. This is not phenomenologically interesting. We want a theory with a nonabelian gauge and charged fermions. By duality to type IIA in Chapter III, we are inspired to put ADE singularities on $G_{2}$ manifold.

## IV.2: M-theory on $G_{2}$ manifold with ADE singularities

It becomes clear that M-theory is necessarily compactified on $G_{2}$ manifold with ADE singularities. Yet, $G_{2}$ manifold with ADE singularities is a difficult construction to work with. The most common model of M-theory on $G_{2}$ manifold with ADE singularities is using the ansatz of $G_{2}$ manifold $Y_{7}$ as fibration

$$
\begin{equation*}
\widehat{\mathbb{C}^{2} / \Gamma_{A D E}} \rightarrow Y_{7} \rightarrow M_{3} \tag{IV.2.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $M_{3}$ is a associative cycle defined in Chapter II, $\widehat{\mathbb{C}^{2} / \Gamma_{A D E}}$ is a family of resolved ADE singularity in various degree. This notation is saying that locally, $Y_{7}=M_{3} \times \widehat{\mathbb{C}^{2} / \Gamma_{A D E}}$. Then $\widehat{\mathbb{C}^{2} / \Gamma_{A D E}}$ is in fact coassociative. The geometry of this is discussed in Chapter II. In particular, when the ADE of $\widehat{\mathbb{C}^{2} / \Gamma_{A D E}}$ is blown up to a certain degree, we have a collection of the sphere called 2-cycles intersecting each other transversely with respect to the corresponding Dynkin diagram.

For each 2-cycle, we use a harmonic one-form $\phi$ on $M_{3}$, which can be thought of as a metric-invariant 3 -vector field on $M_{3}$, to parametrize the size of the 2 -cycle. Alternatively, Katz et al [37, 95] use the coefficients in the Cartan subalgebra as the parameters. Consistently, there is a one-to-one bijection between the two parametrizations given by Table V.1. Following the existing literature, we denote $\widehat{G}\left(f_{1}, f_{2}, f_{3}, \ldots, f_{n}\right)$ as the family of $\widehat{\mathbb{C}^{2} / \Gamma_{G}}$ parametrized by the coordinates $f_{i}$ in Cartan subalgebra where $n$ is the rank of $G$ and use Table V. 1 to compute the "volume" one-form $\phi$ when needed ${ }^{2}$.

Note that the theory actually agrees with the distance conjecture from Vafa et al [106]. The construction of M-theory compactified on a circle is dual to type IIA string theory. Specifically, when an M2 brane wraps around one of the basis two cycles of the resolved $E_{8}$ singularity in our model, it is dual to a string wrapping around a circle in type IIA. When the moduli in our theory go to infinity, it is equivalent to the volume of the two cycles going to infinity. This is dual to the infinite radius limit of a circle in type IIA. Vafa et al [106] has already argued about the infinite tower of massless states in the type IIA side for the infinite radius limit. M-theory inherits this tower through dimensional reduction.

## IV.3: Gauge group enhancement

Inherited from supergravity at the low-energy limit, the basic fields are a metric $g$, a 3 -form potential $C_{3}$, and a gravitino spinor $\Psi$. We will briefly review the essential properties of the fields needed for this paper. More details are discussed in the appendix and [109, 40, 96, 80]. From Chern-Simon (CS) terms, $C_{3}$ is integrated over a manifold of the same dimension, i.e a 3 submanifold of space-time. Excluding time, this submanifold is 2 d spatial. This 2 d submanifold is an $M_{2}$ brane. We say $C_{3}$ electrically couples with $M_{2}$ brane. Dimensional reduction of the $C_{3}$ form on the $A L E$ fiber produces $U(1)$ gauge fields

$$
\begin{equation*}
C_{3}=A_{i} \wedge \omega^{i}+\ldots \tag{IV.3.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

[^9]where $A_{i}$ 's are one forms (vector fields) on $\mathbb{R}^{3,1}$, and $\omega^{i}$ 's are harmonic two forms associated with 2-cycles of ALE fibers.

The non-abelian gauge group is produced in a similar manner as $n$ coincident D6-branes in type IIA string theory [117]. In another perspective independent of duality, the gauge symmetry at an ADE singularity comes from the symmetry of differential form under automorphism of the resolved manifold. This is in fact just isometry of the resolved manifold. Explicitly, the two forms on the resolved manifold can be expressed as an element of the lie algebra of the associated ADE group. Therefore, under an automorphic map on the resolved manifold, the form can be transformed under the action of the lie group. At singular points where some cycles shrink to a single point, the forms in the same orbit under the transformation induced from the automorphism of those cycles correspond to the same state, so the transformation is a gauge transformation. For example, a self-contained description for the gauge transformation from $S U(N)$ singularity, i.e, $A_{N-1}$ type would be summarized in the below diagrams. The $C_{3}$ is decomposed into the basis of the 3 -forms. In the local description, the basis elements contain components that are 2-forms $\alpha_{i}$ on the 2 -spheres $\mathbb{C P}^{1}$ which resolves the singularity.


When embedding $\widehat{\mathbb{C}^{2} / \Gamma}$ into $\mathbb{C}^{N}$, we can explicitly write $\alpha_{i}$ in a local coordinate and see the gauge field $A_{i j}$ transforming under the rotations of $S U(N)$. Fibering this on the $M_{3}$ base,
we see the corresponding adjoint-valued form $\phi$ mentioned in [40]

where $\phi \equiv \sum_{I, J} \phi_{I} \otimes A_{J}$ is explicitly an field transform in adjoint of $S U(N)$ (through $A_{i j} \in \mathfrak{s u}(N)$ ), thus befitting the $S U(N)$ gauge description. Similarly, we can embed $D_{N}$, $E_{6}, E_{7}$, and $E_{8}$ type singularities into $\mathbb{R}^{2 N}, \mathbb{C} \otimes \mathbb{O}$ (bioctonions), $\mathbb{H} \otimes \mathbb{O}$ (quateroctonions), and $\mathbb{O} \otimes \mathbb{O}$ (octooctonions) respectively.

The moral of this is the gauge symmetry comes from the geometrical symmetry of $\widehat{\mathbb{C}^{2} / \Gamma}$ which can be explicitly realized by embedding into a covering space. This is an explicit connection to 7 d super Yang-Mills theory on $\mathbb{R}^{3,1} \times M_{3}$ by Higgs bundle.(The connection has been known for a long time through duality without explicit embedding).

It has always been mentioned that $M_{2}$ branes wrapping ADE singularities will give a non-abelian gauge. In here, we can see gauge boson $A_{i j}$ explicitly and independently from the duality description.

In a more intuitive sense, the warping of $M_{2}$ branes around non-vanishing ALE cycles creates massive vector bosons. The masses are proportional to the volume of the 2-cycles. By shrinking the 2-cycles, we are making those massive bosons massless, Moreover, the configuration of the 2-cycles (Dynkin diagram) dictates the relation of these bosons and fits them perfectly into an non-abelian gauge group. Inversely, at any point on $M_{3}$ where the volume of a 2 -cycle is non-zero, the associated vector boson becomes massive and hence must be removed from the gauge group. Yet, the $U(1)$ in the Cartan subalgebra from (IV.3.1) is unaffected by this, so we still have a $U(1)$ gauge symmetry. Hence, the n-ranked gauge group is broken into an ( $n-1$ )-ranked subgroup and a $U(1)$ (total rank is unchanged). In general, each non-vanishing volume of a basis 2-cycle reduces the rank of the group by one and leaves a $U(1)$ behind. It is important to note that this is similar to the Higgs mechanism except that the Higgsing happens due to the geometry instead of the traditional Higgs doublets as we will discuss in the next section.

## IV.3.1: Chiral Fermion

On a singularity curve for a non-abelian gauge group $H$, which is a resolution of a higher rank singularity of a larger gauge group $G$, chiral fermion solutions are localized at points where the singularity associated with $H$ is worsened by a conical singularity [14, 19, 39, 30]. By considering the resulting extra subgroup generated by the extra shrunk two cycles, one can determine the representation of the fermions with respect to the gauge group $H$. We will elaborate this in V.2.1.

## IV.4: Yukawa couplings from instanton effect

Instanton effect is a non-perturbative effect where semiclassical configurations provide saddle points in the euclidean path integral of the spacetime fields of the theory. Instantons are classical solutions to the equation of motion in field theory. This effect appears in string theories in interesting ways. Instanton in type IIB string theory is a field theory effect while in type IIA, it is a stringy effect from worldsheet. Heterotic string theories can realize instanton in both perspectives. There is also an analogous open worldsheet instanton for type I theory. The Yukawa coupling from the theories matches nicely through dualities. This gives us a tool to lift the effect to M-theory.

In type IIB theory, we can do the explicit computation as follows. The 10 lagrangian on D9-branes with $U(N)$ gauge group reduces at low energies (i.e low radius regime) to 10 d super-Yang-Mills

$$
\begin{equation*}
L=-\frac{1}{4} \operatorname{Tr}\left(F^{M N} F_{M N}\right)+\frac{i}{2} \operatorname{Tr}\left(\bar{\Psi} \Gamma^{M} D_{M} \Psi\right) \tag{IV.4.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $F=d A$. The standard KK reduction procedure in compactification to 4 d is expanding $\Psi$ and $A$ into harmonic modes and integrate out the internal dimensions. Explicitely

$$
\begin{align*}
\Psi\left(x^{\mu}, y^{m}\right) & =\sum_{k} \chi_{(k)}\left(x^{\mu}\right) \otimes \psi_{(k)}\left(y^{m}\right)  \tag{IV.4.2}\\
A_{n}\left(x^{\mu}, y^{m}\right) & =\sum_{k} \varphi_{(k)}\left(x^{\mu}\right) \otimes \phi_{(k), n}\left(y^{m}\right) \tag{IV.4.3}
\end{align*}
$$

where $x^{\mu}$ and $y^{m}$ are 4 d and internal coordiniates, repsectively. The 4 d Yukawa coupling coming from KK reduction of the coupling $A . \Psi . \Psi$ in IV.4.2. Integrating the internal part
gives the Yukawa coupling

$$
\begin{equation*}
Y_{i j k}=\frac{g}{2} \int_{X_{6}} \psi_{i}^{\alpha \dagger} \Gamma^{m} \psi_{j}^{\beta} \phi_{k m}^{\gamma} f_{\alpha \beta \gamma} \tag{IV.4.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

where g is the 10 d gauge coupling, $\alpha, \beta$, and $\gamma$ are $U(N)$ gauge indices and $f_{\alpha \beta \gamma}$ are $U(N)$ structure constants. $\psi$ and $\phi$ are fermionic and bosonic zero modes respectively. The Yukawa couplings are hence the overlap intergrals of the three zero mode wave functions in the internal space. This is a field theory result which neatly matches with other string theories as we will see later.

In type IIA theory on orbifolds, Yukawa couplings between fields living at D6-brane interchapters arise from worldsheet instantons. These are string worldsheets wrapped on a holomorphic 2d surface with disk topology and with boundaries on the intersecting D6branes, as in Figure IV.1. We have analogous situations for heterotic string and type I


Figure IV.1: The three red, blue, and green branes intersects at the dotted lines. The worldsheet instanton is wrapped around the solid triangle whose topology is a disk. This passes through three different vertices Q, q, and H. This gives the Yukawa coupling for the term $H Q q$ in the lagrangian.
theories.

Lifting all of that to M-theory, the Yukawa coupling of three particles is determined by the volume of the 3 -cycles $W_{3}$ wrapping around three singularities where the fermions are localized. Matching this with the discussion in Sec. III.11.1, we conclude the Yukawa
coupling for the interaction of three fermions is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{n_{\gamma}}{\Lambda} e^{V o l\left(W_{3}\right)} \tag{IV.4.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $n_{\gamma}$ is a flow direction sign which we will ignore in this work, and $\Lambda$ can be visualized as the product normalizing factors of wave functions in type IIB. A careful work through the formula, one can see that there is actually a complex phase in the Yukawa coupling due to the $G_{2}$ structure form. For simplicity, we overlook this phase in this work. More details is discussed in [40]. More explicit computation and formula are presented in Chapter V.

## CHAPTER V <br> Moduli from Quark and Charged Lepton Masses in Linearized Model

This chapter is based on a paper we published [73]. In this work, we focus on an Mtheory calculation of the quark and charged lepton masses. The first step is to find an appropriate reduction from eleven to four dimensions. Suppose that spacetime is a product $\mathbb{R}^{3,1} \times Y$ where $Y$ is a compact 7 -d manifold roughly Planck scale in size. Gauge coupling unification and M-theory compactification hint at unbroken supersymmetry at the unification scale. Berger's theorem [13] requires that $\mathcal{N}=1$ SUSY implies that the holonomy group of the manifold $Y$ is $G_{2}$. The resultant low-energy theory can only contain $U(1)$ gauge fields. Such a compactification scheme is unrealistic since the SM contains non-Abelian gauge fields. One introduces singularities into $Y$ to ameliorate this issue. Suppose that the local model of $Y$ with ADE singularity is of the form $\mathbb{C}^{2} / \Gamma \times \mathbb{R}^{3}$, where $\Gamma$ is a finite subgroup of $S U(2)$. Under these circumstances, a super Yang-Mills $\mathcal{N}=1$ multiplet with gauge group $G=S U(k), S O(2 k), E_{6}, E_{7}$ and $E_{8}$ respectively will be supported. These singularities can be deformed to break the symmetry of the gauge group $G$ to a subgroup of $G$ with equal rank.

We focus on breaking $\mathbf{2 4 8}$ of $E_{8}$ to SM particle. The matter that survives the symmetry breaking process consists of three multiplets in the $\mathbf{2 7}$ representation of $E_{6}$, and none in the $\overline{\mathbf{2 7}}$ representation of $E_{6}{ }^{1}$ [39]. This can explain why there are three and only three families. We explore the aforementioned symmetry-breaking pattern by looking to see if a realistic SM-theory can descend from a compactified M-theory construction. We calculate the Yukawa couplings under the assumption that everything originates from a deformed $E_{8}$ theory where the singularity is resolved into a lesser ranked singularity which is associated with $S U(3) \times S U(2) \times U(1) \times U(1)^{4}$ gauge group ${ }^{2}$.

To explain the origin of the three families and their mass hierarchy, breaking $E_{8}$ to

[^10]the SM by the traditional Higgs mechanism has been unsuccessful and has shown a lack of predictability, while geometrically engineered M and F theories with $E_{8}$ points offer an alternative method of symmetry breaking. Moreover, [37] and related works suggest Mtheory based on an $\hat{E}_{8}-A L E$ space provide more predictability than the analogous model in F-theory $[103,119,25]$. Finally, a description of a singular $G_{2}$ manifold with Higgs bundles provides a formulation that makes the explicit computation of Yukawa couplings possible [109, 40].

We are interested in explicitly calculating the hierarchy of quark mass matrices. As that would include an explicit method for computing matter content, in gauge symmetry breaking through deformation, and their coupling constants, the results would be applicable to a wider study of other matter interactions. We also compute the mass matrix for charged leptons.

In Sec. V. 2 we explicitly compute this breaking for the $E_{8}$ singularity with an explicit example of how to compute and locate the fermions on $M_{3}$. Sec. V. 3 discusses the general computation for the Yukawa couplings in a local model which leads to explicit quark and charged lepton terms in Sec. V.4. After some gauge fixing for base-space $M_{3}$ 's parameters, numerical results are discussed in Sec. V.6. We see that the physical hierarchy is achievable with a very small set of solutions, putting a stringent constraint on the moduli of the theory. Sec. V. 7 discusses the roles of both Yukawa couplings and Higgs vacuum expectation values (VEVs) in this hierarchy.

## V.1: Local model

M-theory is an 11-dimensional theory that can be compactified on a compact 7d manifold $X$ while the remaining non-compact four dimensions are the classical 4 space-time. In the supergravity limit, $X$ is necessarily a $G_{2}$ manifold. Moreover, charged chiral particles are only possible on a singular $G_{2}$ manifold [13]. The simplest local model for such 7d manifold is given by the firing of $\widehat{\mathbb{C}^{2} / \Gamma_{A D E}}$ over the base $M_{3}$. Here, $M_{3}$ is an associative 3-cycle ${ }^{3}$ in the $G_{2}$ manifold. $\Gamma_{A D E}$ is a finite subgroup of $S U(2)$ acting on $\mathbb{C}^{2} . \mathbb{C}^{2} / \Gamma_{A D E}$ is an asymptotically locally Euclidean manifold (ALE) with ADE singularity at the origin. $\widehat{\mathbb{C}^{2} / \Gamma_{A D E}}$ denotes any manifold achieved from $\mathbb{C}^{2} / \Gamma_{A D E}$ by partially smoothing (resolving) the singularity. Locally, the manifold is of the form

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mathbb{R}^{3,1} \times \mathbb{R}^{3} \times \widehat{\mathbb{C}^{2} / \Gamma_{A D E}} \tag{V.1.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

[^11]|  | Positive Roots of $E_{n}$ | Volume of Corresponding Two-Cycle |
| :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $e_{i}-e_{j>i}$ | $f_{i}-f_{j>i}$ |  |
| $n \geq 6$ | $-e_{0}+e_{i}+e_{j}+e_{k}$ | $f_{i}+f_{j}+f_{k}$ |
| $\mathrm{n}=8$ | $-2 e_{0}+\Sigma_{j=1}^{6} e_{j}$ | $\Sigma_{j=1}^{6} f_{j}$ |

Table V.1: Positive roots of $E_{n}$ and the associated one-forms (sometimes called "area" in literature) controlling the sizes of 2 -cycles on the ALE fiber. This is Table 1 in [37] with permission.

Note that globally, the fiber $\widehat{\mathbb{C}^{2} / \Gamma_{A D E}}$ varies along the base $\mathbb{R}^{3}$ where the singularity can be smoothed out to different degrees. More details on a recent construction of compact $G_{2}$ manifolds are in [99, 41, 42, 53].

## V.2: $E_{8}$ Breaking

Our goal is to describe all the particles by resolving one single ADE singularity. $E_{8}$ is the only simple Lie group that does the job. $E_{8}$ and its breaking have been studied by several authors [103, 49, 36, 109, 62, 44, 69, 65, 108]. To understand the breaking, we first explicitly write down the simple roots of $E_{8}$ in the Dynkin diagram order (see Figure II.1) where $e_{i}$ 's are orthogonal vectors in $\mathbb{R}^{n, 1}$. Let $\widehat{E}_{8}\left(f_{1}, \ldots, f_{8}\right)$ be the resolution of a $E_{8}$ singularity parametrized by deformation moduli $f_{i}$ 's which are one-forms on $M_{3}$. The simple roots are associated with the volumes of the blown-up 2-cycles by Table V. 1 [37].

Each simple root, or equivalently each knot on the Dynkin diagram, will initially represent a vanishing cycle at the singularity. To break a group to a smaller group, we will "cut" a knot on their diagram so that we get the diagram of the smaller group. Each "cutting" is performed by blowing up the cycle (which was initially vanishing) associated with the knot. We recall that each cycle in the above Dynkin diagram gives rise to a boson whose mass is proportional to the volume of the cycle. Therefore, a vanishing cycle in the above Dynkin diagram will result in a massless boson. The goal is to keep the SM gauge bosons massless (zero volume cycles) while the other bosons are massive (non-zero volume cycles). We will follow the breaking path ${ }^{4}$ of [36]. Figure V. 1 summarizes the above steps. In the figure, we start with an $E_{8}$ singularity which corresponds to $\hat{E}_{8}(0,0,0,0,0,0,0,0)$, then turn on the volumes of the cycles associated with the crossed knots by giving non-zero values for one-form

[^12]

Figure V.1: Breaking of $E_{8}$ by resolving singularity
$f_{i}$ 's. There are five volumes needed to be turned on, so we parameterize $f_{i}$ 's by five non-zero one-forms $a, b, c, d$ and $Y$ (note that $Y$ here is the one-form associated with hypercharge $U(1)^{Y}$, not the hypercharge itself). They are simply parameters that are linearly combined in a specific way so that the volumes of the cycles vanish or blow up appropriately by Table V.1. Then the final manifold is parameterized as [37]

$$
\begin{array}{r}
\widehat{E}_{8}\left(a+b+c+d+\frac{2}{3} Y, a-b+c+d+\frac{2}{3} Y\right. \\
-c-d-\frac{7}{3} Y,-c-d-\frac{7}{3} Y,-c-d+\frac{8}{3} Y \\
\left.-c-d+\frac{8}{3} Y,-c+3 d-\frac{4}{3} Y, 2 c-2 d-\frac{4}{3} Y\right) . \tag{V.2.2}
\end{array}
$$

We can check each step of Figure V. 1 by setting all $a, b, c, d$, and $Y$ in (V.2.2) to zero, then turn them on accordingly to each step, and compute the volumes using Table V.1. In the
following, we can check the volumes of the cycles corresponding to the simple roots in the final step
(V.2.3)

$$
\left(\begin{array}{cc}
e_{1}-e_{2} & 2 b \\
e_{2}-e_{3} & a-b+2 c+2 d+3 Y \\
e_{3}-e_{4} & 0 \\
e_{4}-e_{5} & -5 Y \\
e_{5}-e_{6} & 0 \\
e_{6}-e_{7} & -4 d+4 Y \\
e_{7}-e_{8} & -3 c+5 d \\
-e_{0}+e_{6}+e_{7}+e_{8} & 0
\end{array}\right)
$$

This is exactly the configuration of Figure V.1. Note that one can use any different set of one-forms as long as they fulfill the desired configuration and sufficiently parameterize the independent non-vanishing cycles.
Therefore, whatever constraint we make, to avoid an unwanted shrunk cycle which will lead to an extra massless boson, we have to make non-zero volumes in the above table remain non-zero. The would mean

$$
\begin{array}{rr}
b \neq 0 & a-b+2 c+2 d+3 Y \neq 0 \\
Y \neq 0 & Y \neq d \tag{V.2.5}
\end{array}
$$

Although all the shrunken simple root cycles result in massless $U(1)$ bosons, the anomaly cancellation will give most of them a mass in Sec. V.8. The only $U(1)$ remains massless is the GUT $U(1)$ (in Table V.2, it is $\left.U(1)^{d}\right)$.

## V.2.1: Fermion Representations

Given a gauge group $H$ for the theory, the corresponding cycles on the fiber are shrunk everywhere along the base manifold $M_{3}$. Those cycles correspond to the simple roots of H. A matter representation happens at the points where additional cycles associated with positive roots (see Table V.1) vanish. By letting the positive roots vanish one by one, we can find all the resulting representations. We will do a few examples showing how to calculate
the representation.
First, we consider $e_{2}-e_{3}$ cycle. Using the above table, we conclude that the associated volume is $f_{2}-f_{3}=a-b+2 c+2 d+3 Y$. Now, we consider the curve where this particular cycle vanishes: $a-b+2 c+2 d+3 Y=0$. In order to know what representation emerges at this curve, we consider what kind of weight diagram is generated from $e_{2}-e_{3}$ and the roots from the gauge group (corresponding to the globally shrunk cycles) $e_{3}-e_{4}$ (corresponding to $S U(2)$ ), and $e_{5}-e_{6}$ and $-e_{0}+e_{6}+e_{7}+e_{8}$ (corresponding to $S U(3)$ ). In more details, we will try to find what are the positive roots we can get from $e_{2}-e_{3}$ by adding or subtracting $e_{3}-e_{4}, e_{5}-e_{6}$, and $-e_{0}+e_{6}+e_{7}+e_{8}$.

$$
\begin{equation*}
S U(2) \tag{3}
\end{equation*}
$$

$$
\begin{array}{lc}
e_{2}-e_{4} & \text { No positive root from }+/ \text { - simple roots } e_{5}-e_{6} \text { or }-e_{0}+e_{6}+e_{7}+e_{8} \\
\uparrow_{e_{3}-e_{4}} & \\
e_{2}-e_{3} & e_{2}-e_{3}
\end{array}
$$

From above, we see that there are two positive roots corresponding to $S U(2)$, so the particle will behave like 2 of $S U(2)$. Only one positive root for $S U(3)$ case, so it is a singlet for $S U(3)$. Thus, this is a $(\mathbf{2}, \mathbf{1})$ of $S U(2) \times S U(3)$ (corresponding to $H_{2}^{u}$ as in the Table V.2). Notice that the above calculation implies that $e_{2}-e_{4}$ yields the same particle.
Next, let's try another positive root, say $-e_{0}+e_{2}+e_{3}+e_{5}$. The curve equation is $f_{2}+f_{3}+f_{5}=$ $a-b-c-d+Y=0$. Then, we get

$$
\begin{equation*}
S U(2) \tag{3}
\end{equation*}
$$

$$
\begin{array}{cc}
-e_{0}+e_{2}+e_{3}+e_{5} & -2 e_{0}+e_{2}+e_{3}+e_{5}+e_{6}+e_{7}+e_{8} \\
\uparrow e_{3}-e_{4} & \uparrow-e_{0}+e_{6}+e_{7}+e_{8} \\
-e_{0}+e_{2}+e_{4}+e_{5} & -e_{0}+e_{2}+e_{3}+e_{5} \\
\uparrow e_{5}-e_{6} \\
-e_{0}+e_{2}+e_{3}+e_{6}
\end{array}
$$

So by counting the positive roots, we conclude that it is $\mathbf{2}$ for $S U(2)$ and $\mathbf{3}$ or $\overline{\mathbf{3}}$ for $S U(3)$. As fundamental and anti-fundamental are just a convention, we call this order of adding $e_{5}-e_{6}$ and $-e_{0}+e_{6}+e_{7}+e_{8}$ associated with fundamental $\mathbf{3}$. Thus this is a $(\mathbf{2}, \mathbf{3})$ of $S U(2) \times S U(3)$. Lastly, for completeness, we will illustrate the case of $\overline{\mathbf{3}}$ with $-e_{0}+e_{2}+e_{3}+e_{4}$. The curve equation is $f_{2}+f_{3}+f_{4}=a-b-c-d-4 Y=0$. Then, we get

$$
S U(2)
$$

$$
\begin{array}{cc}
\text { No other positive root } & -2 e_{0}+e_{2}+e_{3}+e_{4}+e_{5}+e_{7}+e_{8} \\
-e_{0}+e_{2}+e_{3}+e_{4} \uparrow & -2 e_{0}+e_{2}+e_{3}+e_{4}+e_{6}+e_{7}+e_{8} \\
-e_{0}+e_{6}+e_{7}+e_{8} \uparrow \\
-e_{0}+e_{2}+e_{3}+e_{4}
\end{array}
$$

Notice that the order of adding $e_{5}-e_{6}$ and $-e_{0}+e_{6}+e_{7}+e_{8}$ is reversed from the previous case, so, by above convention, this is a $(1, \overline{3})$ of $S U(2) \times S U(3)$.
Bourjaily et al [37] have already worked out the breaking for us. The charges for relevant particles in this paper is presented in Table V.2. The location of the singularity associating with a particle is a linear combination of moduli weighted by the charges. For instance, the location of $Q_{1}$ is the curve that satisfies

$$
\begin{equation*}
a+b-c-d+Y=0 \tag{V.2.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

## V.3: Yukawa Coupling from Volume of the Three-Cycle

In the superpotential, a cubic term $A B C$ is allowed at tree level if the product transforms as a singlet under the gauge group. In particular, that implies the sum of charges for each of the $U(1)$ 's is zero. If such a term happens, each of the particles $A, B$, and $C$ will live on a different conical singularity which corresponds to different points $t_{A}, t_{B}$, and $t_{C}$ on the base $W$ which are solutions of equations derived from Table V. 2 (similar to V.2.6). The idea of this section is that the Yukawa coupling coefficient of this term is inversely proportional to the exponential of the volume of the three-cycle wrapping around the three singularities

$$
\begin{equation*}
\text { Yukawa coupling }=n_{A B C} \frac{e^{-V o l\left(\Sigma_{A B C}\right)}}{\Lambda_{A B C}} \tag{V.3.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\Sigma_{A B C}$ is the three-cycle wrapping around the singularities, $n_{A B C}$ is the sign of the term which depends subtly on the orientation of the three cycle[40] ${ }^{5}, \Lambda_{A B C}$ is a scale factor which is approximately the volume of $G_{2}$ manifold. We will temporarily ignore both $n_{A B C}$ and $\Lambda_{A B C}$ in our analysis in this section.

We are interested in the limit where gravity decouples. The $G_{2}$ manifold here is treated

[^13]|  | $S U_{3}$ | $S U_{2}$ | $U_{1}^{a}$ | $U_{1}^{b}$ | $U_{1}^{c}$ | $U_{1}^{d}$ | $U_{1}^{Y}$ |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $Q_{1}$ | $\mathbf{3}$ | $\mathbf{2}$ | 1 | 1 | -1 | -1 | 1 |
| $Q_{2}$ | $\mathbf{3}$ | $\mathbf{2}$ | 1 | -1 | -1 | -1 | 1 |
| $Q_{3}$ | $\mathbf{3}$ | $\mathbf{2}$ | -2 | 0 | -1 | -1 | 1 |
| $u_{1}^{c}$ | $\overline{\mathbf{3}}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | 1 | 1 | -1 | -1 | -4 |
| $u_{2}^{c}$ | $\overline{\mathbf{3}}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | 1 | -1 | -1 | -1 | -4 |
| $u_{3}^{c}$ | $\overline{\mathbf{3}}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | -2 | 0 | -1 | -1 | -4 |
| $d_{1}^{c}$ | $\overline{\mathbf{3}}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | 1 | 1 | -1 | 3 | 2 |
| $d_{2}^{c}$ | $\overline{\mathbf{3}}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | 1 | -1 | -1 | 3 | 2 |
| $d_{3}^{c}$ | $\overline{\mathbf{3}}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | -2 | 0 | -1 | 3 | 2 |
| $L_{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{2}$ | 1 | 1 | -1 | 3 | -3 |
| $L_{2}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{2}$ | 1 | -1 | -1 | 3 | -3 |
| $L_{3}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{2}$ | -2 | 0 | -1 | 3 | -3 |
| $H_{1}^{u}$ | $\overline{\mathbf{1}}$ | $\mathbf{2}$ | 1 | 1 | 2 | 2 | 3 |
| $H_{2}^{u}$ | $\overline{\mathbf{1}}$ | $\mathbf{2}$ | 1 | -1 | 2 | 2 | 3 |
| $H_{3}^{u}$ | $\overline{\mathbf{1}}$ | $\mathbf{2}$ | -2 | 0 | 2 | 2 | 3 |
| $H_{1}^{d}$ | $\overline{\mathbf{1}}$ | $\mathbf{2}$ | 1 | 1 | 2 | -2 | -3 |
| $H_{2}^{d}$ | $\overline{\mathbf{1}}$ | $\mathbf{2}$ | 1 | -1 | 2 | -2 | -3 |
| $H_{3}^{d}$ | $\overline{\mathbf{1}}$ | $\mathbf{2}$ | -2 | 0 | 2 | -2 | -3 |
| $e_{1}^{c}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | 1 | 1 | -1 | -1 | 6 |
| $e_{2}^{c}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | 1 | -1 | -1 | -1 | 6 |
| $e_{3}^{c}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | $\mathbf{1}$ | -2 | 0 | -1 | -1 | 6 |

Table V.2: Relevant particles from three families of $E_{6}$, for a complete listing see [37] or Appendix A. 2 .
as large enough to make the calculation manageable. Then, we can focus on a local patch of $M_{3}$ which is approximately $\mathbb{R}^{3}$. The volume of the three-cycle in the linearization has been roughly formulated by [37]. However, a more complete analysis shows the requirement of the harmonic condition and relative rotations of the fields. By BPS equations [40], locally for each moduli $\phi$ ( $\phi=a, b, c, d$, and $Y$. These are the $f_{i}$ 's in the previous sections), there is a harmonic function $h_{\phi}$ on $M_{3}$ base so that $\phi=d h_{\phi}$ [40]. For simplicity, we think of $\phi$ as a three vector, and $\phi=\nabla h_{\phi}$. The harmonic condition requires that $\Delta h_{\phi}=0$. That means

$$
\begin{equation*}
\partial_{i} \phi^{i}=0 . \tag{V.3.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

This requires that on linear level,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\phi=H t+v \tag{V.3.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $H$ is a real traceless symmetric 3 x 3 matrix, $v$ is a real three vector, $t$ is a local real parametrization of the 3d base. Then, $h_{\phi}$ will have the form

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{1}{2} t^{T} H t+v^{T} t+c \tag{V.3.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

where c is a constant term.
The location of a particle, say $X$, is a zero $t_{X}$ of a linear combination $\phi_{X}$ of $a, b, c, d$, and $Y$ with by the charges from table V.2. From the previous discussion, $t_{X}$ is the critical point of a harmonic function $h_{\phi_{X}}$. Assume the critical points are isolated. This is the same as assuming $H_{X}$ is invertible. The critical point of $h_{\phi_{X}}$ or the zero point of $\phi_{X}$ is

$$
\begin{equation*}
t_{X}=-H_{X}^{-1} v_{X} \tag{V.3.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then, if the $A B C$ term is allowed, i.e, $h_{\phi_{A}}+h_{\phi_{B}}+h_{\phi_{C}}=0$, the volume for the three-cycle wrapping the three critical points $t_{A}, t_{B}$ and $t_{C}$ is ${ }^{6}$

$$
\begin{align*}
\operatorname{Vol}\left(\Sigma_{A B C}\right) & =h_{\phi_{A}}\left(t_{A}\right)+h_{\phi_{B}}\left(t_{B}\right)+h_{\phi_{C}}\left(t_{C}\right) \\
& =\frac{1}{2}\left(-v_{A}^{T} H_{A}^{-1} v_{A}-v_{B}^{T} H_{B}^{-1} v_{B}\right.  \tag{V.3.6}\\
& \left.+\left(v_{A}+v_{B}\right)^{T}\left(H_{A}+H_{B}\right)^{-1}\left(v_{A}+v_{B}\right)\right) .
\end{align*}
$$

Notice that the constant $c$ in Eq. (V.3.4) plays no role here due to cancellation, so in practice, we will simply drop it. In Sec. V.4.3, explicit computation for a Yukawa coupling is shown

[^14]for a quark term.

## V.3.1: Discussion of Other Features

So far, we have only considered $M_{3}$ as a flat $\mathbb{R}^{3}$ which obviously overlooks the very stringent global structure of a compact $G_{2}$ manifold. This structure may reduce the parametrization freedom we have in the flat local case. The singularities curves may also cut each other at some point beyond the local area due to compactness, increasing the number of possible Yukawa couplings. Additionally, the sign factors in Eq. (VI.2.2) may also change the mass matrix significantly. They are determined by the gradient flow of the $h_{\phi}$ [40, 82, 28]. It is difficult to study the gradient flow between singular points for the local model as the space is not compact. Future study of the gradient flows and hence the sign factors can reveal more of the mass matrix.
As mentioned in Sec. V.2.1, we should project out particles we do not plan to include in our theory. Projecting a specific particle includes requiring that the curves never satisfy the particle's equation derived from Table V.2. That would create more restraint on the parameters.For our local case in particular,in order to exclude a particle $\phi$, it would require a vanishing determinant of the $H_{\phi}$ and $v_{\phi}$ not being in the range of $H_{\phi}$ i.e $v_{\phi} \notin \mathrm{R}\left(H_{\phi}\right)$. This constraint will make the numerical computation much more difficult, so we will not pursue it here. It is noteworthy that in general, beyond our linearization, we can locally break linearity through deformation near the unwanted singularities while keeping the rest intact. Careful study is needed on this issue.

## V.4: Quark Terms

## V.4.1: General Quark Terms

Recall that the quarks get mass when the Higgses receive VEVs. For example,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lambda^{i j} H_{k}^{u} Q_{i} u_{j} \rightarrow\left\langle H_{k}^{u}\right\rangle \lambda^{i j} Q_{i}^{k} u_{j}^{k} . \tag{V.4.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

Ellis et al [64] showed that $\tan \beta \approx 7$, from electroweak symmetry breaking, so we know both up and down VEVs in the two-Higgs-doublets model. We will discuss later how to adapt these into the six Higgs doublets in this paper. Quark terms that satisfy the vanishing sum
of charges are

$$
\begin{gather*}
Q_{1} u_{2}^{c} H_{3}^{u}+Q_{2} u_{1}^{c} H_{3}^{u}+Q_{1} d_{2}^{c} H_{3}^{u}+Q_{2} u_{1}^{c} H_{3}^{u}+ \\
Q_{2} u_{3}^{c} H_{1}^{u}+Q_{3} u_{2}^{c} H_{1}^{u}+Q_{2} d_{3}^{c} H_{1}^{u}+Q_{3} u_{2}^{c} H_{1}^{u}+  \tag{V.4.2}\\
Q_{3} u_{1}^{c} H_{2}^{u}+Q_{1} u_{3}^{c} H_{2}^{u}+Q_{3} d_{1}^{c} H_{2}^{u}+Q_{1} u_{3}^{c} H_{2}^{u} .
\end{gather*}
$$

Note that there is no diagonal term $Q_{i} u_{i}^{c} H_{j}^{u}$ in this general setting. Moreover, this labeling $i$ is completely interchangeable although manifestly picking $i=(1,2,3)$ corresponding to (up, charm, top) is a computationally convenient choice here. Also, some couplings between the Higgs and the quarks which could have been possible in SM are forbidden here due to the extra $U(1)$ 's. Nonetheless, those terms can still be generated by the Giudice-Masiero mechanism after the breaking of supergravity [47, 7]. However, we will leave this mechanism to future study in the context of M-theory with $E_{8}$ orbifold. In the following sections, we will focus on the simplest constraints on the moduli to make the theory physical.

The relevant terms for leptons are

$$
\begin{gather*}
L_{1} e_{2}^{c} H_{3}^{d}+L_{2} e_{3}^{c} H_{1}^{d}+L_{3} e_{1}^{c} H_{2}^{d}+  \tag{V.4.3}\\
L_{1} \nu_{2}^{c} H_{3}^{u}+L_{2} \nu_{3}^{c} H_{1}^{u}+L_{3} \nu_{1}^{c} H_{2}^{\nu} . \tag{V.4.4}
\end{gather*}
$$

Notice that we only have Dirac mass terms here. Majorana terms may require a quartic level, extra particles getting a VEV, or extra constraints on the moduli, so we will not discuss such terms in this Chapter. In the next chapter, we will explore the VEV options for the particles to facilitate Majorana terms.

## V.4.2: Diagonal Terms and Setting $a=0$

(V.4.2) shows that there is no diagonal term for the quark matrices. This appears to be a problem because, with the top quark mass much larger than those of up and charm quarks, the trace of the mass matrix must be non-zero. This problem is generic in our method of constructing three families from $E_{8}$ singularity. The same issue was discussed in the F-theory context in [25]. The reason for this is the conservation of charge in $a$ and $b$. Hence, this directly relates to the separation of families because $a$ and $b$ break the adjoint of $E_{8}$ into three $\mathbf{2 7}^{\prime} s$ in $E_{6}$. So, particles in the same family must have the same charge in $a$ and $b$, making it impossible for them to form a singlet cubic term within the same family in a generic setting. One way to remedy this is to introduce a self-intersecting curve for the up-type when $Y=0$ [25], using the fact that in grand unified theories $u$ and $Q$ both stay on the same curve of $\mathbf{1 0}$ of $S U(5)$. However, this method cannot be applied for down-type as $d$
does not stay on the same curve as $Q$. Moreover, self-intersecting requires higher-order than linearization which we will not pursue here. Alternatively, Bourjaily et al [37] also discuss the contribution of quartic terms. This will require giving large VEVs for extra particles, creating more parameters which we will not consider at this time.
In this paper, we can consider some constraints on $a$ and $b$ leading to possible non-zero diagonal terms. This in essence sets a relation for $a$ and $b$ charges. We still keep in mind the condition of non-vanishing volumes in (V.2.4) as we do not wish to unnecessarily enhance the gauge symmetry. The simplest constraint we can make is $a=0$. Although it is intriguing to study other constraints, we will ignore them in this paper. This constraint will restrict the gauge group to $S U(3) \times S U(2) \times U(1)^{Y} \times U(1)^{b} \times U(1)^{c} \times U(1)^{d}$. In terms of geometry, this breaking of $U(1)^{a}$ is equivalent to restricting the basis 2-cycles in a linear relation, reducing the number of independent 2-cycles and hence the number of $U(1)$ 's.

## V.4.3: Quark Mass Matrices

After setting $a=0$ together with the localization, the up-type quark mass matrix can be computed. We will show one example of the computation here for $M_{12}^{u} u_{1} u_{2}^{c}$. It comes from the term

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lambda_{123}^{u} Q_{1} u_{2}^{c} H_{3}^{u} \tag{V.4.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

When the Higgs gets VEV at low scale, the term becomes

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lambda_{123}^{u}\left\langle H_{3}^{u}\right\rangle u_{1} u_{2}^{c} \tag{V.4.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $M_{12}^{u}=\lambda_{123}^{u}\left\langle H_{3}^{u}\right\rangle$. Then, all that is left is to compute $\lambda_{123}^{u}$. At high scale, $\lambda_{123}^{u}$ can be calculated from (V.3.6) and Table V.2. In the linearization language

$$
\begin{align*}
H_{Q_{1}} & =H_{b}-H_{d}+H_{Y}  \tag{V.4.7}\\
v_{Q_{1}} & =v_{b}-v_{d}+v_{Y}  \tag{V.4.8}\\
H_{u_{2}} & =-H_{b}-H_{d}-4 H_{Y}  \tag{V.4.9}\\
v_{u_{2}} & =-v_{b}-v_{d}-4 v_{Y} \tag{V.4.10}
\end{align*}
$$

then (V.3.6) gives

$$
\begin{align*}
& \operatorname{Vol}\left\{\Sigma_{Q_{1} u_{2}^{c} H_{3}^{u}}\right\}=  \tag{V.4.11}\\
& \frac{1}{2}\left(\left(v_{b}-v_{d}+v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(H_{b}-H_{d}+H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(v_{b}-v_{d}+v_{Y}\right)+\right. \\
& \left(-v_{b}-v_{d}-4 v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(-H_{b}-H_{d}-4 H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(-v_{b}-v_{d}-4 v_{Y}\right)+  \tag{V.4.12}\\
& \left.\left(2 v_{d}+3 v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(+2 H_{d}+3 H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(2 v_{d}+3 v_{Y}\right)\right)
\end{align*}
$$

Thus, (VI.2.2), ignoring the overall scaling, gives

$$
\begin{align*}
& \lambda_{123}^{u}=\frac{n_{12}^{u}}{\lambda} \exp \{ \\
& \left.-\frac{1}{2} \right\rvert\,\left(v_{b}-v_{d}+v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(H_{b}-H_{d}+H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(v_{b}-v_{d}+v_{Y}\right)+ \\
& \left(-v_{b}-v_{d}-4 v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(-H_{b}-H_{d}-4 H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(-v_{b}-v_{d}-4 v_{Y}\right)+ \\
& \left.\left(2 v_{d}+3 v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(+2 H_{d}+3 H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(2 v_{d}+3 v_{Y}\right) \mid\right\} \tag{V.4.13}
\end{align*}
$$

Then, we have to run these Yukawa couplings down to the SM scale to compute the mass. Note that the diagonal term $Q_{3} u_{3}^{c} H_{3}^{c}$, obtained from setting $a=0$, can be computed by the above method.

## V.4.4: Six Higgs VEVs

In the six Higgs doublets model without extra $U(1)$ 's, one can choose a basis for up-type and down-type Higgses so that only one pair of Higgses gets a VEV without loss of generality. Here, due to different charges for the Higgses from the extra $U(1)$ 's (see Table V.2), we cannot make such a choice of basis.

We will try to translate from the two VEVs of SM Higgses to the six VEVs in our theory. By standard QFT, we can relate this by looking at the mass of W boson in the SM and identify

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left\langle H_{u}^{S M}\right\rangle^{2}=\sum_{i}\left\langle H_{u}^{i}\right\rangle^{2}  \tag{V.4.14}\\
& \left\langle H_{d}^{S M}\right\rangle^{2}=\sum_{i}\left\langle H_{d}^{i}\right\rangle^{2} . \tag{V.4.15}
\end{align*}
$$

So, we can use spherical parametrization to write

$$
\begin{align*}
\left\langle H_{u / d}^{1}\right\rangle & =\left\langle H_{u / d}^{S M}\right\rangle \cos \phi_{u / d} \sin \theta_{u / d}, \\
\left\langle H_{u / d}^{2}\right\rangle & =\left\langle H_{u / d}^{S M}\right\rangle \sin \phi_{u / d} \sin \theta_{u / d},  \tag{V.4.16}\\
\left\langle H_{u / d}^{3}\right\rangle & =\left\langle H_{u / d}^{S M}\right\rangle \cos \theta_{u / d} .
\end{align*}
$$

Flavor changing neutral current (FCNC) is a risk in multiple Higgses models. It is dangerous as experiments put stringent bound on allowed couplings. We will discuss this in Sec. .

## V.4.5: Toward Physical Coupling

Note that the Yukawa couplings in M-theory belong to the high energy scale. We will attempt to use the already existent list of high scale Yukawa coupling running from SM experimental Yukawas in Table 1 of [20] ${ }^{7}$ and find a solution for our parameters. Babu et al [20] have studied the Yukawa coupling for minimal $\mathrm{SO}(1)$ unification. As three families in $S O(10)$ are the same as our three families except for the $U(1)^{b}$ charge ${ }^{8}$, we assume the effect of the extra $\mathrm{U}(1)$ 's and extra particles ( for instance, extra Higgses) from our theory in the renormalization group equations (RGEs) is similar, and the Yukawas have approximately the same magnitudes as in [20]. Admittedly, this is a major assumption that requires careful scrutiny. Unfortunately, the renormalization group for our case is a demanding work that deserves a separate study by itself, so we leave it to future study.

In order to compare with physical Yukawa couplings, we need to take into account a few modifications. First, as mentioned in [25], we need a scaling factor to normalize the wave function. For cubic Yukawa, it is roughly proportional to $V_{G_{2}}^{-\frac{1}{2}}$ where $V_{G_{2}}$ is the volume of $G_{2}$ manifold and still a parameter in our theory (as a local model cannot determine the global volume). Thus the scaling factor for all the cubic Yukawas is a parameter in this local model.

## V.4.6: Higgs VEVs

On the other hand, recall that the Higgses only get VEVs at a low scale. Therefore, precisely speaking, we can only consider the VEVs of the six Higgses after we run our M-theory Yukawa couplings down to a low scale. Unfortunately, at a high scale, we only have a set of algebraic expressions for M-theory Yukawas, making the running down to low scale complicated. Moreover, we cannot directly fit our Yukawas with the existing data of high scale running from SM Yukawas because they all assume a two Higgses model. Therefore,

[^15]to remedy this problem, we will use a heuristic treatment assuming that the angular factors, in Eq. (V.4.16), are regarded as part of the low scale Yukawa couplings and do not change much while running to a high scale. Then, the effective VEVs at low scale is just the two VEVs from the SM, and the Yukawa couplings at the high scale used to fit with Table 1 of [20] then are
\[

$$
\begin{equation*}
Y=f(\phi, \theta) \lambda \tag{V.4.17}
\end{equation*}
$$

\]

where $\lambda$ is a Yukawa computed from Sec. V.4.3 and $f(\phi, \theta)$ is one of the angular functions associated with the Higgs fields from Eq. (V.4.16.) The full table of high-scale Yukawa couplings with angular factors is presented in Appendix A.1.

## V.5: Yukawa matrix for gauge group $S U(3) \times S U(2) \times U(1)^{Y} \times U(1)^{b} \times$ $U(1)^{c} \times U(1)^{d}$

First, we need to fix all extra degrees of freedom. Translation allows setting $v_{d}=0$. We also have three degrees of rotation and one degree of scaling to make $v_{b}=(1,0,0)$.

Second, we will try to consider the scattering around special cases of $H_{b}$ and $H_{d}$. Notice from the list in (V.2.4) that by setting all parameters to zero except $b$, we see that volumes of root $e_{1}-e_{2}$ and $e_{2}-e_{3}$ are controlled by $b$. They are responsible for breaking the adjoint of $E_{8}$ into three 27's of $E_{6}$ (see Figure V.1), hence are also responsible for separating the three SM families.

On the other hand, $d$ controls $e_{2}-e_{3}, e_{6}-e_{7}$, and $e_{7}-e_{8}$. The blown-up two-cycle of $e_{2}-e_{3}$ breaks the adjoint of $E_{8}$ into two 27 's of $E_{6}$, which transform as the fundamental and singlet of $S U(2)$ respectively, i.e, $(\mathbf{2 7}, \mathbf{2}) \oplus(\mathbf{2 7}, \mathbf{1})$. Thus $d$ seperates one family (the top quark family) from the other two in the adjoint of $E_{8}$. The latter still has an $S U(2)$ family symmetry (which is broken when we turn $b$ on ). Additionally, $e_{6}-e_{7}$ corresponds to breaking the 27's of $E_{6}$ into the presentations of $S O(10)$, separating the Higgses from quarks and leptons. Finally, $e_{7}-e_{8}$ splits the $\mathbf{1 6}$ 's of $S O(10)$ into the $\mathbf{1 0}$ and $\overline{\mathbf{5}}$ of $S U(5)$. Thus, $d$ also separates the up-type quarks (up, charm, top) from the down-type quarks (down, strange, bottom), i.e. an isospin breaking effect.

## V.6: Numerical Evaluation

To test the compatibility of this model with the Standard Model, we perform a regression on the free parameters by a least-squares approach. Our calculations of Yukawa couplings


Figure V.2: One solution found numerically.
are compared to experimentally measured weak scale Yukawa couplings which have been run up to the GUT scale ${ }^{9}$. The theoretical uncertainty in the calculation dominates over the experimental uncertainties and we only consider theoretical uncertainty when minimizing the sum of the residuals.

Using previous arguments, we set the base parameters corresponding to $a=0$ to zero, $v_{d}$ to zero, and $v_{b}$ to $(1,0,0)$. With three $3 \times 3$ traceless symmetric matrices $H_{\phi}$ and two 3 -vectors, we have 18 free parameters from the base space. We have four additional parameters from the Higgs VEVs, satisfying $\left\langle\left(H_{1}^{2}+H_{2}^{2}+H_{3}^{2}\right)^{1 / 2}\right\rangle=\left\langle H_{\text {MSSM }}\right\rangle$. Although we have more free parameters than constraints from the data, the non-linearity in calculating the Yukawas restricts the solutions. A list of numerical solutions is in Appendix. A set of samples from the numerical evaluation is shown in Fig. V.2. We have observed some general trends among the numerical solutions. Most importantly, there exists a hierarchy of Yukawas within each family which comes from the breaking of the flavor and family

[^16]symmetries. There is a large top quark Yukawa coupling. Finally, it appears that the hierarchy solution only happens when $\theta$ is small, an observation that is expected from the aforementioned no-neutral-current condition.

## V.7: Effect of the Higgses and Yukawa couplings

We want to use this section to emphasize the necessity of both the Higgs sector and the Yukawa exponential factor (which is of stringy origin) in satisfying the hierarchy. Recall that if $M$ is the quark mass matrix from above, then the diagonalized mass matrix $\Lambda$ satisfies

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Lambda^{2}=U^{T} M M^{T} U=V^{T} M^{T} M V \tag{V.7.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $U$ and $V$ are left and right rotations to mass basis. This means the mass hierarchy is determined by the symmetrized $M M^{T}$.

First, if only one family of the Higgses get VEVs, say $H_{3}$, we will get the symmetrized up-type quark matrix of the form

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{lll}
0 & A & 0 \\
A & 0 & 0 \\
0 & 0 & B
\end{array}\right\}
$$

Although we still have a hierarchy with one heavy and two light families, there is no hierarchy between the lighter two.

Second, if all three Higgs families get VEVs while all the Yukawa coefficients are the same (equal to 1 ), the theory will not have the physical hierarchy. Considering only the angular factors (dropping the common VEV factor), we have the matrix in the form

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{ccc}
0 & \tilde{A} & \tilde{B} \\
\tilde{A} & 0 & \tilde{C} \\
\tilde{B} & \tilde{C} & \tilde{A}
\end{array}\right\}
$$

Then, from the characteristic equation, we conclude

$$
\left\{\begin{array}{l}
\lambda_{1}+\lambda_{2}+\lambda_{3}=\tilde{A}  \tag{V.7.2}\\
\lambda_{1} \lambda_{2}+\lambda_{2} \lambda_{3}+\lambda_{3} \lambda_{1}=\tilde{A}^{2}+\tilde{B}^{2}+\tilde{C}^{2}=1
\end{array}\right.
$$

This can be shown to imply that the quark hierarchy can never satisfy Eq. (V.7.2). Therefore, both the three families of Higgses and the stringy Yukawa suppression are needed for the hierarchy.

## V.8: Anomalies

The theory may result in gauge boson triangle anomalies. Such an anomaly can be canceled by Stückelberg-Green-Schwarz mechanism and gives some bosons a mass.

## V.8.1: How to Compute the Anomaly

We focus our attention on a model with gauge group $S U(3) \times S U(2) \times U(1)^{n}$ where the $U(1)$ 's are to be examined. It can be shown that anomalies of the $U(1)$ 's come from triangle loop of bosons in three configurations: $S U(3)-S U(3)-U(1)$ and $S U(2)-S U(2)-U(1)$ and $U(1)-U(1)-U(1)$. The anomaly of a triangle from three $U(1)$ 's is proportional to the sum of particles that transform under the nonabelian factor weighted by the charge of $U(1)$ factors. If this sum is zero, the configuration of $U(1)$ 's is anomaly-free. Otherwise, it is anomalous.

Explicitly, for

- $U^{a}(1)-U^{b}(1)-U^{c}(1)$ it is simply the sum, over all the particles, of the products of $\mathrm{U}(1)$ charges: $\sum_{i: \text { all particles }} q_{i}^{a} q_{i}^{b} q_{i}^{c}$.
- $S U(3)-S U(3)-U(1)$ : Sum of $\mathrm{U}(1)$ charges over all triplet: $\sum_{i: \text { all triplets }} q_{i}$.
- $S U(2)-S U(2)-U(1)$ : Sum of $\mathrm{U}(1)$ charges over all doublet: $\sum_{i: \text { all doublets }} q_{i}$.

Note that $(\mathbf{3}, \mathbf{2})$ has three $S U(2)$ doublets and two $S U(3)$ triplets.

## V.8.2: Anomaly Cancelation by Stückelberg-Green-Schwarz Mechanism

[17] In string theory, an additional term is added to cancel out the anomaly. Such a term will give a mass to the anomalous boson. This is called Stückelberg-Green-Schwarz mechanism.

Table V.3: Anomaly $U(1)-U(1)-U(1)$ computation.

| a-a-a | -78 | b-b-b | -6 | c-c-c | 96 |
| :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- | :--- |
| d-d-d | 0 | Y-Y-Y | 0 | a-a-b | 18 |
| a-a-c | -96 | a-a-d | 0 | a-a-Y | 0 |
| b-b-a | 26 | b-b-c | -32 | b-b-d | 0 |
| b-b-Y | 0 | c-c-a | 0 | c-c-b | 0 |
| c-c-d | 0 | c-c-Y | 0 | d-d-a | 0 |
| d-d-b | 0 | d-d-c | -288 | d-d-Y | 0 |
| Y-Y-a | 0 | Y-Y-b | 0 | Y-Y-c | -288 |
| Y-Y-d | 0 | a-b-c | 0 | a-b-d | 0 |
| a-b-Y | 0 | a-c-d | 0 | a-c-Y | 0 |
| a-d-Y | 0 | b-c-d | 0 | b-c-Y | 0 |
| b-d-Y | 0 | c-d-Y | 288 |  |  |

The anomaly-related terms in effective action is

$$
\begin{align*}
\mathcal{S}= & -\sum_{i} \int d^{4} x \frac{1}{4 g_{i}^{2}} F_{i, \mu \nu} F_{i}^{\mu \nu}-\underbrace{\frac{1}{2} \int d^{4} x \sum_{I}\left(\partial_{\mu} a^{I}+M_{i}^{I} A_{\mu}^{i}\right)^{2}}_{\text {Stückelberg term }}  \tag{V.8.1}\\
& +\underbrace{\frac{1}{24 \pi^{2}} C_{i j}^{I} \int a^{I} F^{i} \wedge F^{j}}_{\text {Green-Schwarz term }}+\underbrace{\frac{1}{24 \pi^{2}} E_{i j, k} \int A^{i} \wedge A^{j} \wedge F^{k}}_{\text {Chern-Simons term }}
\end{align*}
$$

where $a^{I}$ are axions, $C_{i j}^{I}$ is symmetric, $E_{i j k}$ is antisymmetric between $i$ and $j$. Then, when the anomalous variation is distributed democratically among the three vertices, the condition for canceling the anomalies is

$$
\begin{equation*}
t_{i j k}+E_{i j k}+E_{i k j}+M_{i}^{I} C_{j k}^{I}=0 \tag{V.8.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $t_{i j k}=\operatorname{Tr}\left\{t_{i} t_{j} t_{k}\right\}$. We now focus on the anomalies coming from $U(1)-U(1)-U(1)$ triangle which are computed in Table V.3. Then, the generators are commuting, so $t_{i j k}$ is
totally symmetric. Summing all equations of permutation of $i, j$, and $k$, we get

$$
\begin{equation*}
M_{i}^{I} C_{j k}^{I}+M_{j}^{I} C_{k i}^{I}+M_{k}^{I} C_{i j}^{I}=-3 t_{i j k} \tag{V.8.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

where we used $E_{i j k}=-E_{j i k}$. We can use the value of $t_{i j k}$ to compute possible value for $M_{i}^{I}$ and $C_{i j}^{I}$.

Notice that simultaneous transformation

$$
\begin{equation*}
M_{i}^{I} \rightarrow a^{I} M_{i}^{I} \quad C_{i j}^{I} \rightarrow \frac{1}{a^{I}} C_{i j}^{I} \tag{V.8.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

for all $i, j$ leaves the equations invariant. So, if (V.8.4) has a solution, the solution will only be unique up to the ratio of the masses. For the anomaly of $b-b-b$, the system is simply reduced to one linear equation giving $U(1)^{b}$ a nonzero mass, up to a scaling,

$$
\begin{equation*}
M_{b}=-3 t_{b b b}=18 \tag{V.8.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

This specific number does not mean much due to scaling freedom ${ }^{10}$. The only significant point is $U(1)^{b}$ being massive. Similarly, $U(1)^{c}$ is also massive. Unfortunately, $U(1)^{d}$ remains massless. This is due to the fact that $d-d-d$ and $c-c-d$ anomalies are 0 while $c-c-c$ one is non-zero. Yet, as the Higgses are charged in $U(1)^{d}\left(U(1)^{b}\right.$ as well), their electroweak VEVs can give mass to the bosons. Similarly, $U(1)^{Y}$ is also massless.

## V.9: Stabilization

One would naturally ask if the solution we found is indeed a solution that stabilizes the $G_{2}$ manifold. Our argument is that our local moduli solution can be stabilized by appropriate global moduli. Notice that in our local theory, the local moduli control the resolution of $E_{8}$ singularity but are not a complete set of moduli controlling the global $G_{2}$ manifold. Acharya et al [10] showed that M-theory is stabilized on a large class of smooth $G_{2}$ manifolds. Such smooth formulation does not precisely describe the singular manifold in our model, but we assume that our local singular region is small enough so that the contribution to overall stabilization will be a perturbation from the equations from [10]. After all, the linear formulation for the $a, b, c, d, Y$ in our paper requires locality, otherwise linear order is not enough to describe the theory.

Moreover, we can see that heuristically, the moduli is stabilizable from Acharya et al's formulation through the remaining global moduli that do not control the singularities. Recall

[^17]that $a, b, c, d, Y$ controls the volume of the two-cycles resolving the $E_{8}$ singularity. These cycles intersect transversely according to the Dynkin diagram. Two intersecting two-cycles will make a complex two torus. Thus, roughly the volume of the manifold is locally
\[

$$
\begin{equation*}
V \sim \sum r_{1} \times r_{2} \times r_{3} \times\left(r_{a} \times r_{b}+r_{b} \times r_{c}+r_{c} \times r_{d}+\ldots\right) \tag{V.9.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

\]

where $r_{1,2,3}$ control the volume of the $M_{3}$ base, $r_{a, b, c, d, Y}$ control the volumes of the complex two tori. Then, each individual term is at the standard product form in eq (2) of [10]. This volume can be stabilized by exactly the same mechanism as in [10] because the equations for each $r_{i}$ agree among the terms (see eq (18) and (19) of [10]). Notice that our model does not determine $r_{1,2,3}$, thus their values can be stabilized accordingly to accompany $r_{a, b, c, d, Y}$ so that the stabilization equations (eq (18) and (19)) are satisfied. This is only heuristic because there can be more moduli when we go global on $G_{2}$ manifold, and there can be the coefficients for each term (constant coefficients do not effect our argument here).

This also addresses the concern of gravity self-reaction. The effect of self-reaction on the masses can be limited by moduli stabilization. The only way for the self-reaction to affect the masses in our model is changing the location of the singularities on the internal $G_{2}$ manifold. That will result in a change in the moduli. If the moduli are at the stable point, the self-reaction will push them out of equilibrium. The stabilizing mechanism will kick in and restore the moduli to the stable point, canceling the effect of self-correction.

One can also refer additionally to the Acharya et al [6] where they argue that the moduli stabilization mechanism produces vacua within the regime of validity of supergravity. For large Yukawa's like the top, Acharya and Witten suggests that the duality with the heterotic string suggests that there is no significant back reaction [5]

## V.10: Flavor changing neutral current

So far, FCNCs are considered rare events. There are several experiments that have searched for FCNCs without any evidence of them [51, 18]. Some experiments have shown evidence of FCNC [15]. These experiments put stringent bounds on the allowed FCNC [33]. For example, at $\sqrt{s}=13 \mathrm{TeV}$, the Yukawa couplings for flavor changing top-up and top-charm are bounded above by 0.037 and 0.071 , respectively [51]. In the following, we will try to estimate the couplings which can cause FCNC. Admittedly, the following couplings are estimated at the GUT scale, so running down to a low scale is needed to be more rigorous.

For each of the up-type and down-type Higgs triad, we choose a new basis for the Higgses
$\tilde{H}_{i}^{u / d}$ so that the VEVs will concentrate on one Higgs $\tilde{H}_{1}^{u / d}$.

$$
\left(\begin{array}{c}
\tilde{H}_{1}^{u / d}  \tag{V.10.1}\\
\tilde{H}_{2}^{u / d} \\
\tilde{H}_{3}^{u / d}
\end{array}\right)=\underbrace{\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
\sin \theta_{1 / 2} \cos \phi_{1 / 2} & \sin \theta_{1 / 2} \sin \phi_{1 / 2} & \cos \theta_{1 / 2} \\
\cos \theta_{1 / 2} \cos \phi_{1 / 2} & \cos \theta_{1 / 2} \sin \phi_{1 / 2} & -\sin \theta_{1 / 2} \\
\cos \phi_{1 / 2} & -\sin \phi_{1 / 2} & 0
\end{array}\right)}_{A}\left(\begin{array}{l}
H_{1}^{u / d} \\
H_{2}^{u / d} \\
H_{3}^{u / d}
\end{array}\right)
$$

Then, we can write $H_{i}^{u / d}$ as linear combinations of $\tilde{H}_{i}^{u / d}$ (using $A^{T}$ ). Next, we groups the terms coupling with $\tilde{H}_{i}^{u / d}$ into three different groups by i. When $\tilde{H}_{1}^{u / d}$ gets VEVs, the first group generate mass terms for quarks and charged leptons just like in earlier sections. The second and third groups are responsible for potential FCNC. For instance, the up-type quarks terms can be separated into

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{i, j} \tilde{Y}_{1 i j}^{u} \tilde{H}_{1}^{u} Q_{i} u_{j}^{c}+\tilde{Y}_{2 i j}^{u} \tilde{H}_{2}^{u} Q_{i} u_{j}^{c}+\tilde{Y}_{3 i j}^{u} \tilde{H}_{3}^{u} Q_{i} u_{j}^{c} \tag{V.10.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\tilde{Y}_{k i j}^{u}$ have both contributions from the original Yukawa couplings and entries of $A^{T}$. The first terms generate up-type quarks mass matrix while the second and third terms, as they do not get VEVs, may create FCNC couplings in the mass eigen-basis.

Using the solution in A.4, we can compute the mass eigenstates for the fermions.

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Lambda_{u, d, e}=U_{u, d, e}^{T} M_{u, d, e} V_{u, d, e} \tag{V.10.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\Lambda_{u, d, e}$ are diagonal mass matrices for the three types of fermions, $M_{u, d, e}$ are the matrices of computed Yukawa couplings fro moduli, $V_{u, d, e}$ and $U_{u, d, e}$ are right and left diagonalizing orthonormal matrices whose columns are eigenvectors of $M_{u, d, e}^{T} M_{u, d, e}$ and $M_{u, d, e} M_{u, d, e}^{T}$ respectively. We use $V_{u, d, e}$ and $U_{u, d, e}$ to change the basis for all of the terms in V.10.2. Then the

FCNC couplings for $\tilde{Y}_{2 i j}^{u} \tilde{H}_{2}^{u} Q_{i} u_{j}^{c}$ and $\tilde{Y}_{3 i j}^{u} \tilde{H}_{3}^{u} Q_{i} u_{j}^{c}$ respectively are (ignore signs)

$$
\begin{gather*}
\tilde{Y}_{2 i j}^{u}=\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
1.1 \times 10^{-1} & 6.7 \times 10^{-1} & 1.8 \times 10^{-2} \\
6.0 \times 10^{-5} & 1.810^{-5} & 8.1 \times 10^{-3} \\
4.2 \times 10^{-8} & 7.7 \times 10^{-8} & -1.2 \times 10^{-7}
\end{array}\right)  \tag{V.10.4}\\
\tilde{Y}_{3 i j}^{u}=\left(\begin{array}{lll}
2.1 \times 10^{-1} & 6.1 \times 10^{-2} & 1.6 \times 10^{-3} \\
3.7 \times 10^{-4} & 1.1 \times 10^{-4} & 2.9 \times 10^{-6} \\
5.7 \times 10^{-8} & 1.6 \times 10^{-7} & 1.6 \times 10^{-8}
\end{array}\right) . \tag{V.10.5}
\end{gather*}
$$

In this case the couplings for flavor changing for top-up and top-charm are about $\left.\mathcal{O}\left(10^{-2}\right)\right)$ and $\mathcal{O}\left(10^{-3}\right)$ respectively. This is consistent with [51].

Similarly, the FCNC matrices for down-type quarks are

$$
\begin{align*}
& \tilde{Y}_{2 i j}^{d}=\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
3.4 \times 10^{-10} & 1.6 \times 10^{-10} & 1.3 \times 10^{-7} \\
6.9 \times 10^{-2} & 1.5 \times 10^{-3} & 6.0 \times 10^{-8} \\
1.3 \times 10^{-3} & 3.1 \times 10^{-3} & 1.4 \times 10^{-7}
\end{array}\right)  \tag{V.10.6}\\
& \tilde{Y}_{3 i j}^{d}=\left(\begin{array}{lll}
4.7 \times 10^{-10} & 7.1 \times 10^{-11} & 6.9 \times 10^{-14} \\
9.7 \times 10^{-2} & 2.1 \times 10^{-3} & 1.5 \times 10^{-5} \\
2.0 \times 10^{-3} & 2.3 \times 10^{-3} & 2.0 \times 10^{-7}
\end{array}\right) . \tag{V.10.7}
\end{align*}
$$

$\tilde{Y}_{k 21}^{d}=\mathcal{O}\left(10^{-2}\right), \tilde{Y}_{k 32}^{d}=\mathcal{O}\left(10^{-3}\right)$, and $\tilde{Y}_{k 31}^{u}=\mathcal{O}\left(10^{-3}\right)$ are dangerous. The upper bounds for them experimentally are about $\mathcal{O}\left(10^{-5}\right)$, (strange-down) $\mathcal{O}\left(10^{-4}\right)$ (bottom-strange) and $\mathcal{O}\left(10^{-4}\right)$ (bottom-down) for $\Delta F=2$ processes. $\tilde{Y}_{k 32}^{d}$ and $\tilde{Y}_{k 31}^{u}$ are still safe for the $\mathcal{O}\left(10^{-3}\right)$ bounds from $\Delta F=1$ rare B decays [33]. As noted by [33], the diagonal terms may have interference and cause cancellations, so more careful calculations are needed. We leave this to future works.

Finally, the lepton FCNC terms

$$
\begin{gather*}
\tilde{Y}_{2 i j}^{e}=\left(\begin{array}{lll}
8.9 \times 10^{-6} & 7.5 \times 10^{-5} & 5.3 \times 10^{-6} \\
6.0 \times 10^{-7} & 5.3 \times 10^{-6} & 8.5 \times 10^{-6} \\
2.1 \times 10^{-5} & 1.8 \times 10^{-4} & 3.2 \times 10^{-6}
\end{array}\right)  \tag{V.10.8}\\
\tilde{Y}_{3 i j}^{e}=\left(\begin{array}{lll}
6.0 \times 10^{-6} & 5.3 \times 10^{-5} & 3.7 \times 10^{-6} \\
4.3 \times 10^{-7} & 3.8 \times 10^{-6} & 1.1 \times 10^{-7} \\
1.5 \times 10^{-5} & 1.3 \times 10^{-4} & 2.3 \times 10^{-6}
\end{array}\right) . \tag{V.10.9}
\end{gather*}
$$

These all satisfy the constraints from [33].

## V.11: Conclusion

We used the geometric gauge breaking mechanism in M-theory compactified on singular $G_{2}$ manifold to help understand quark and charged lepton masses. We start with the adjoint representation of a single $E_{8}$ that contains exactly three related families of quarks and leptons. Then, we break $E_{8}$ to the Standard Model via deformations and geometric engineering, following the technique of Katz and Morrison [95]. We explicitly computed Yukawa couplings in a local model and shows their fitting with experimental results.

With this approach, we hope to understand the origin of flavors and three families and the values of quark and lepton masses. We are partially successful. We can see three families and the hierarchy of quark and lepton masses emerge. We can see the isospin breaking that makes the $S U(2)$ doublets such as top and bottom, up and down, electron and electron neutrino which all have different masses and the hierarchy of family masses. The amounts are controlled by deformation parameters that are effectively moduli. We can calculate the values of the deformation moduli that lead to the hierarchy and realistic values for the masses. Ideally, we would be able to predict the values at which the deformation moduli are stabilized, and predict the masses, but we are not yet able to do so. In principle, the moduli have to satisfy stabilization constraints, neutrino sector, global $G_{2}$ structure, and so on. So, future studies on these constraints applying to our quark and lepton context may make the theory predictive.

We are able to get some important mass values. We work with high scale Yukawa couplings. The top quark has a Yukawa coupling of order one. The up quark can be less than the down quark. More precisely, $m_{u p}+m_{e} \lesssim m_{\text {down }}$ (ignoring an electromagnetic
contribution), so that protons will be stable rather than neutrons, allowing hydrogen atoms. We can derive the conditions in the underlying theory for this inequality, or for the top Yukawa to be of order unity, but we cannot yet show they must uniquely hold. Three families and a hierarchy of masses do arise generically. The theory might not have allowed these results, so we view obtaining them in a UV complete theory as significant progress. We don't at this stage have much control over what masses are associated with the three extra $U(1)$ 's, but none should be massless. Then the spectrum should contain four new Z' states. They are well motivated. In future work, it may be possible to constrain their masses. Lastly, we also leave the study of the remaining particles resulting from $E_{8}$ breaking for future study.

## CHAPTER VI Neutrino Mass

This chapter is based on a paper we published [71]. M-theory compactified on a $G_{2}$ manifold with resolved $E_{8}$ singularity is a promising candidate for a unified theory. The experimentally observed masses of quarks and charged leptons put restrictions on the moduli of the $G_{2}$ manifold. These moduli in turn uniquely determine the Dirac interactions of the neutrinos. In this chapter, we explicitly compute the Dirac terms for neutrino mass matrix using the moduli from a localized model with resolved $E_{8}$ singularities on a $G_{2}$ manifold. This is a novel approach as the Dirac terms are not assumed but derived from the structure of quarks' and charged leptons' masses. Using known mass splittings and mixing angles of neutrinos, we show the acceptable region for Majorana terms. We also analyze the theoretical region for Majorana terms induced from the expectation values of right-handed neutrinos and their conjugates through the Kolda-Martin mechanism [97, 7]. The intersection of the two regions indicates a restriction on neutrino masses. In particular, the lightest neutrino must have a small but non-zero mass. Moreover, this also puts constraints on possible Majorana contributions from Kähler potential and superpotential, which can be traced down to a restriction on the geometry. We conclude that the masses of the two heavier light neutrinos are about 0.05 eV and $0.009 \mathrm{eV}(0.05 \mathrm{eV}$ and 0.05 eV$))$ for normal (inverted) hierarchy. In both hierarchies, we predict the light neutrinos are mostly Dirac type. Hence neutrino-less double-beta decay will be small. This is a testable result in a near future. Some bounds on heavy neutrinos are also derived.

## VI.1: Overview

The origin of the light left-handed neutrinos in the Standard Model (SM) has been a mystery. Cosmological probes have constrained the sum of the left handed neutrino masses to be $\Sigma m_{\nu}<0.12$ (0.15) eV for normal (inverted) ordering [58].

Due to non-zero mixing angles, neutrino flavor eigenstates (electron, muon, and tau) are not the same as the neutrino mass eigenstates (simply labeled " 1 ", " 2 ", and " 3 "). It is not
known which of these three is the heaviest. In analogy with the mass hierarchy of the charged leptons, the configuration with mass 2 being lighter than mass 3 is conventionally called the "normal hierarchy", while in the "inverted hierarchy", the opposite would hold. Several major experimental efforts are underway to help establish which is correct. Current data favors the normal hierarchy, although the confidence for this hierarchy has been decreasing over the years [58]. Neutrino mass splittings observed from neutrino oscillation are $\Delta m_{12}^{2}=$ $7.6 \times 10^{-5} \mathrm{eV}^{2}$, and $\Delta m_{13}^{2}=2.5 \times 10^{-3} \mathrm{eV}^{2}$ [58]. Moreover, the oscillation angles are about $\theta_{12}=33.44^{\circ}, \theta_{23}=49.0^{\circ}$, and $\theta_{13}=8.57^{\circ}[58,59]$, which can be used to explicitly compute the flavor components of mass eigenstates. In this chapter, we will assume the normal hierarchy first, and then apply a similar framework to the inverted hierarchy.

We show that viable neutrino masses can arise within the framework of M-theory with resolved $E_{8}$ singularities, which is a highly non-trivial result, given the constrained nature of M-theory constructions. From our previous work [72], we numerically compute a local solution for moduli of $G_{2}$ manifold from the experimental masses of quarks and charged leptons. As these moduli locally control the geometry structure of the manifold, they determine all other interactions in the model. Therefore, we can use them to compute the Dirac mass terms of the neutrinos. This distinguishes our approach from previous works with neutrino Dirac mass $[7,104,48,24,114,70,56,57,16,102]$ as we do not make an estimation, instead we compute the Dirac terms explicitly. Furthermore, these Dirac masses are insufficient, and Majorana masses are also required.

The origin of Majorana mass terms has been complicated to realize from the string theory perspective [7]. For instance, it is possible to obtain large Majorana mass terms from instanton effects [9, 35, 64], large volume compactification [52], or orbifold compactifications of the heterotic string [43]. In this work, we use the Kolda-Martin mechanism [98, 54] to generate vacuum expectation values (VEVs) for the scalar components of right-handed neutrino supermultiplets and their conjugates. The Kolda-Martin (K-M) mechanism includes effects of non-perturbative terms via the Kähler potential. A similar approach has been done by Acharya et al for an $S O(10)$ gauge group [7]. Our work expands the idea to an explicit resolved $E_{8}$ singularities model, with three generations fitting the experimental data for quarks and charged leptons, and computes neutrino Dirac terms. The computed Dirac terms put constraints on the Majorana terms through the see-saw mechanism, and the Majorana terms are generated from the VEVs of right-handed neutrinos.

Additionally, when the conjugates of the right-handed neutrinos get VEVs, we inevitably generate bilinear R-parity violating terms of the form $\epsilon_{i j} L_{i} H_{j}$. There are many works dedicated to studying these terms [23, 50, 60]. In general, due to the presence of large Majorana terms, the bilinear mixing between Higgs and leptons may spoil the Higgs physics. It is more
favorable to have a small $\epsilon_{i j}$. This puts stringent constraints on the aforementioned VEVs. In this paper, we show that there are solutions for the VEVs in which the mixing between leptons and Higgses is minimal. As a result of the constraints, with a generic un-suppressed Kähler potential coefficient, the lightest neutrino can be neither massless nor heavy.

Furthermore, the nature of the lightest neutrinos is expected to be determined in a near future. The most important process for this effort is the neutrinoless double-beta decay, in which the total lepton number is violated by two units. If the neutrinos are mostly Dirac, neutrinoless double beta decay will be small. If the light neutrinos are significantly Majorana, the experiments should be able to detect them, and therefore a good window for new physics, e.g.neutralinos (which are Majorana particles) and R-parity violating interactions[105]. In this paper, we predict that the light particles are mostly Dirac, hence the decay will be small.

This chapter is organized as follows: Sec. VI. 2 will briefly cover the local model of Mtheory compactified on a $G_{2}$ manifold with resolved $E_{8}$ singularities [72]. Sec. VI. 3 will list all of the contributions to the neutrino mass matrix. Sec. VI. 5 discusses the VEVs for the right-handed neutrinos and their conjugates through the K-M mechanism while discussing the $\epsilon_{i j}$ problem. Sec. VI. 6 contains the computed Dirac matrix and sets up the framework for the neutrino mass matrix. In Sec. VI. 7 we discuss the Majorana mass matrix from the experimental data and the VEVs of right-handed neutrino. In Sec. VI. 8 we deduce a limit on the neutrino masses. We predict the masses of the mass eigenstate neutrinos, though we cannot yet exclude one of the normal or inverted cases. Finally, some insight about heavy neutrino masses is presented in Sec. VI.9.

## VI.2: Background

## VI.2.1: General setup

In our model, the resolved $E_{8}$ singularity results in matter as in Table 9 and Table 10 in [36]. In the following, the charges are listed in the same order as in Table 10 in [36] (which is in Appendix A. 2 for convenience), namely in order $a, b, c, d, Y$. Then we have

$$
\begin{align*}
E_{8} \rightarrow & S U(3) \times S U(2) \times U(1)_{a} \times U(1)_{b}  \tag{VI.2.1}\\
& \times U(1)_{c} \times U(1)_{d} \times U(1)_{Y}
\end{align*}
$$

The hypercharge $Y$ has a factor of 6 compared to the conventional hypercharge normalization to make all the Ewe take the convention $L_{i}$ to be left-handed lepton doublets, $\nu_{i}$ and $\nu_{i}^{c}$ to be right-handed neutrinos and its conjugates. The reason for $a=0$ is to allow large top quark mass [72]. Note that the simple root cycles do not shrink under this condition, so there
is no enhanced gauge group. This is similar to taking the diagonal $U(1)_{a} \times U(1)_{b}$. Notice that a $\mu$ term $H_{i}^{u} H_{j}^{d}$ is generally not allowed, but can be generated by the Giudice-Masiero mechanism [48].

## VI.2.2: Yukawa couplings

Recall that the couplings for the interactions in the superpotential are given by the instanton effect [40, 19, 10, 86, 109]

$$
\begin{equation*}
Y=\frac{1}{\Lambda} e^{-V_{3} \text { cycles }} \tag{VI.2.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\Lambda$ is a scaling factor proportional to the volume of the $G_{2}$ manifold [10, 40]. In our model, the local moduli are not enough to determine the volume, so we treat $\Lambda$ as a parameter. $V_{3}$ cycles is the volume of the three cycles stretching between the three singularities where the three particles in the cubic terms are located. This volume is a function of the moduli

$$
\begin{align*}
& \operatorname{Vol}\left(\Sigma_{A B C}\right)=\frac{1}{2}\left(-v_{A}^{T} H_{A}^{-1} v_{A}-v_{B}^{T} H_{B}^{-1} v_{B}\right. \\
& \left.\quad+\left(v_{A}+v_{B}\right)^{T}\left(H_{A}+H_{B}\right)^{-1}\left(v_{A}+v_{B}\right)\right) \tag{VI.2.3}
\end{align*}
$$

Here, $\Sigma_{A B C}$ is a three-cycle covering three singularities where $\mathrm{A}, \mathrm{B}$, and C localize. Moreover, each singularity's location on $M_{3}$ is determined by the critical point of

$$
\begin{equation*}
f=\frac{1}{2} t^{T} H t+v^{T} t+c \tag{VI.2.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $t$ is the local 3 -d coordinate on $M_{3}, H$ is a $3 \times 3$ matrix, $v$ is a 3 -vector, and c is a scalar. Using this setup, we can write down the mass matrix for quarks and charged leptons. Then, by fitting to experimental data, we can find the solutions for $f_{i}$ 's in the local model. We will use the fit result of $b, c, d$, and $Y$ from [72]. In a full theory on a determined $G_{2}$ manifold, the moduli should uniquely determine every other quantity in the theory as they determine the geometry of the manifold. In our local model, as there is some global structure we are missing, the $f_{i}$ 's will determine many quantities, such as Dirac neutrino terms, but leave some other quantities, such as coefficients of Majorana terms and soft breaking terms [7], subject to tuning. Nonetheless, most of our main results will not depend on the tuning.

## VI.3: Terms

## VI.3.1: Neutrino-neutrino mixing terms

At tree level, the contribution from the superpotential is

$$
\begin{align*}
W_{\text {tree }} & \supset y_{123} H_{1}^{u} L_{2} \nu_{3}^{c}+y_{132} H_{1}^{u} L_{3} \nu_{2}^{c}+y_{312} H_{3}^{u} L_{1} \nu_{2}^{c} \\
& +y_{321} H_{3}^{u} L_{2} \nu_{1}^{c}+y_{213} H_{2}^{u} L_{1} \nu_{3}^{c}+y_{231} H_{2}^{u} L_{3} \nu_{1}^{c} \\
& +y_{333} H_{3}^{u} L_{3} \nu_{3}^{c} \tag{VI.3.1}
\end{align*}
$$

where $y_{i j k}$ are coupling constants computed from Eq. VI.2.2. There are also contributions to the same terms from the Kähler potential with coefficients of order $\frac{1}{m_{p l}}$ which is negligible [7]. Similar to the work done by Acharya et al [7] to generate a Majorana mass term, we get contributions to the superpotential of the form

$$
\begin{equation*}
W \supset \sum_{0 \leq h, l, m \leq n} \sum_{i, j, k=1,2,3} \frac{C_{h, l, m}}{m_{p l}^{2 n-3}}\left(\nu_{i}^{c} \nu_{i}\right)^{h}\left(\nu_{j}^{c} \nu_{j}\right)^{l}\left(\nu_{k}^{c} \nu_{k}\right)^{m} \tag{VI.3.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $n=h+l+m$, and $m_{p l}=2.4 \times 10^{18} \mathrm{GeV}$ is the reduced Planck mass. One may notice that $\nu_{i}$ is not in the list of particles we listed in the local model. As $\nu_{i}$ has opposite charges as those of $\nu_{i}^{c}$, its singularity will be at a critical point of the same flow function $f_{i}$ of $\nu_{i}^{c}$ but with opposite Morse index ${ }^{1}$. Our linearization does not allow more than one critical point for each function, so we can only assume $\nu_{i}$ localizes somewhere outside of our local patch and depends on the global moduli. Accordingly, $C_{h, l, m}$ is determined by the same exponential formula in Eq. (VI.2.2), but we do not know the global moduli to compute the volume of the wrapping cycle. As a result, $C_{h, l, m}$ is considered a tunable parameter in our local model. As the wrapping cycle is supposed to be outside the local patch, we expect its volume to be larger relative to those in the local patch. Hence, by Eq. (VI.2.2), $C_{h, l, m}$ is expected to be smaller than the cubic couplings we encountered before.

Contributions from the Kähler potential to the same terms are expected. They can be computed from the full Kähler potential [26, 101]

$$
\begin{equation*}
K=-3 \log \left(\frac{V}{2 \pi}\right) \tag{VI.3.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

[^18]where $V$ is the volume of $G_{2}$ manifold. Unfortunately, the precise dependence of the volume on the global moduli in resloved $E_{8}$ orbifold is unknown. We assume it is not significant due to the generic suppression as in [7].

By solving D term and F term equations from the terms in Eq. (VI.3.2), one can find the VEVs for right-handed neutrinos and their conjugates. Assuming the leading term is quartic which we will justify later, the Majorana mass terms for conjugate right-handed neutrinos in the superpotential would have the form

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{i, j} \frac{C_{1,1}}{m_{p l}}\left(\left\langle\tilde{\nu}_{i}\right\rangle\left\langle\tilde{\nu}_{j}\right\rangle\right) \nu_{i}^{c} \nu_{j}^{c} \tag{VI.3.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\left\langle\tilde{\nu}_{i}\right\rangle$ is the VEV of the scalar component of $\nu_{i}$. We will discuss the mechanism of getting those VEVs in Sec. VI.5. In the same manner, the Dirac mass terms emerge from Eq. VI.3.1 when the Higgses get VEVs. One may concern about terms of the forms

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{i, j} \frac{C_{1,1}}{m_{p l}}\left(\left\langle\tilde{\nu}_{i}\right\rangle\left\langle\tilde{\nu}_{j}^{c}\right\rangle\right) \nu_{i}^{c} \nu_{j} \quad \text { and } \quad \sum_{i, j} \frac{C_{1,1}}{m_{p l}}\left(\left\langle\tilde{\nu}_{i}^{c}\right\rangle\left\langle\tilde{\nu}_{j}^{c}\right\rangle\right) \nu_{i} \nu_{j} . \tag{VI.3.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

But as we suppress terms in VI.3.7, the VEVs $\left\langle\tilde{\nu}_{j}{ }^{c}\right\rangle$ are suppressed. Hence, the above terms are negligible.

## VI.3.2: Mixing Matter with Higgs Superfields

Additionally, when the scalar components of the conjugate of right-handed neutrino superfields $\nu_{i}^{c}$ get VEVs, cubic terms of the form $Y_{i j k} H_{i}^{u} L_{j} \nu_{k}^{c}$ from Eq. (VI.3.1) will give rise to the mixing between $L_{j}$ and $H_{i}^{u}$ superfields. They appear in superpotential as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mu_{i j} H_{i}^{u 0} L_{j} \tag{VI.3.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $H_{i}^{u 0}$ is Higgsino, and

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mu_{i j}=Y_{i j k}\left\langle\tilde{\nu}_{k}^{c}\right\rangle . \tag{VI.3.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

This mixing can potentially spoil the Higgs physics, so it is generally more favorable to consider small $\mu_{i j}$ relative to Dirac mass terms in the neutrino mass matrix. This creates a stringent condition which requires $\left\langle\tilde{\nu}_{k}^{c}\right\rangle<\left\langle H_{i}^{u}\right\rangle$ while $\left\langle\tilde{\nu}_{k}\right\rangle$ remains large due to Eq. (VI.3.5) and the see-saw mechanism. This will be realized in Sec. VI.5.

Furthermore, the presence of R-parity violating bilinear terms (B-RPV) induces a sub-
electroweak scale (EWS) VEV on the scalar components of the neutrino component of the left-handed leptons fields $L$. In our case, below the EWS, we expect the same VEVs, generating a mixing between right-handed neutrino and Higgsinos [7]

$$
\begin{equation*}
\epsilon_{i j} H_{i}^{u 0} \nu_{j}^{c} \tag{VI.3.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

Although this can create some correction to our analysis, the contribution is usually expected to be smaller than the Dirac mass terms [7].

## VI.3.3: Mixing Matter with Gauginos

Finally, as in the Minimal Supersymmetric Standard Model (MSSM), the presence of VEVs will mix some fermions with gauginos through kinetic terms, namely, the Higgsinos with $\tilde{B}_{1}, \tilde{W}_{0}$ due to the Higgses VEVs [31]. Similarly, in our case, we also have $\nu^{c}$-type and $\nu$-type scalar VEVs, which will mix gauginos with matter fermions through kinetic terms. Explicitly, we have, for the $S U(2)$ states (left-handed neutrinos $\nu_{L i}$ ),

$$
\begin{align*}
L & \supset g^{\prime}\left\langle\tilde{\nu}_{L i}^{c}\right\rangle \tilde{B} \nu_{L i}+g\left\langle\tilde{\nu}_{L i}^{c}\right\rangle \tilde{W}^{0} \nu_{L i}+g_{b}\left\langle\tilde{\nu}_{L i}^{c}\right\rangle \tilde{B}_{b} \nu_{L i} \\
& +g_{c}\left\langle\tilde{\nu}_{L i}^{c}\right\rangle \tilde{B}_{c} \nu_{L i}+g_{d}\left\langle\tilde{\nu}_{L i}^{c}\right\rangle \tilde{B}_{d} \nu_{L i} \tag{VI.3.9}
\end{align*}
$$

where the coefficients are gauge couplings. There will be an extra (charge $\times \sqrt{(2)}$ ) coefficient for each specific particle [31]. The VEVs $\left\langle\tilde{\nu}_{L i}^{c}\right\rangle$ is expected to be smaller than Dirac mass terms [7]. We have similar terms for swapping $\nu_{L i}^{c} \leftrightarrow \nu_{L i}$. For the $\nu$-states and $\nu^{c}$-states, which are singlets under the SM gauge group, mixing takes the form

$$
\begin{equation*}
L \supset g_{b}\left\langle\tilde{\nu}_{i}^{c}\right\rangle \tilde{B}_{b} \nu_{i}+g_{c}\left\langle\tilde{\nu}_{i}^{c}\right\rangle \tilde{B}_{c} \nu_{i}+g_{d}\left\langle\tilde{\nu}_{i}^{c}\right\rangle \tilde{B}_{d} \nu_{i} \tag{VI.3.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

We have similar terms for swapping $\nu_{i}^{c} \leftrightarrow \nu_{i}$. In Sec. VI.3.2, we discussed that terms of the form $\tilde{B}\left\langle\tilde{\nu}_{i}^{c}\right\rangle \nu_{i}$ are small due to the small VEVs $\left\langle\tilde{\nu}_{i}^{c}\right\rangle$ which will be computed in Sec. VI.5. The only significant mixing is that of the forms $\left\langle\tilde{\nu}_{i}\right\rangle \tilde{B} \nu_{i}^{c}$. We will discuss their contribution to the mass matrix in the next section.

## VI.3.4: General Mass Matrix

Combining all of the previous arguments, we can write down the general mass matrix for neutrinos. Considering the basis

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(\tilde{B}, \tilde{W}^{0}, \tilde{B}_{b, c, d}, H_{1,2,3}^{u 0}, L_{1,2,3}, \nu_{1,2,3}^{c}\right) \tag{VI.3.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

the mass matrix will be

$$
M=\left(\begin{array}{c|c}
M_{\chi^{0}}^{8 \times 8} & M_{\chi \nu}^{8 \times 6}  \tag{VI.3.12}\\
\hline\left(M_{\chi \nu}^{8 \times 6}\right)^{T} & M_{\nu}^{6 \times 6}
\end{array}\right)
$$

where $M_{\chi \nu}^{8 \times 6}$ is the mixing sub-matrix between gauginos, Higginos, and neutrinos. $M_{\chi^{0}}^{8 \times 8}$ is the pure gauginos-Higginos sub-matrix, and $M_{\nu}^{6 \times 6}$ is mixing between $L_{i}$ and $\nu_{i}^{c}$. Denote

$$
M_{\nu}^{6 \times 6}=\left(\begin{array}{cc}
0 & D \\
D^{\top} & R M
\end{array}\right)
$$

where $D$ and $R M$ are $3 \times 3$ Dirac and Majorana mass matrices. As both $M_{\chi^{0}}^{8 \times 8}$ and $M_{\chi \nu}^{8 \times 6}$ have significant entries, their contribution to the neutrino mass can be significant. In particular, as mentioned in the previous section, the only significant mixing coming from $M_{\chi \nu}^{8 \times 6}$ is the mixing between gauginos and $\nu_{i}^{c}$. However, the size of the full matrix and the unknown parameters make the analysis challenging.

## VI.4: Assumption about the texture of the mass matrix

Instead, we consider several cases and handle each case separately. We need to assume that the matrices behave similarly to their simplified texture matrix. In detail, from the full mass matrix, we can extract the following texture blocks that are directly involved in neutrino masses as

$$
\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
A & 0 & B  \tag{VI.4.1}\\
0 & 0 & D \\
B^{T} & D^{\top} & R M
\end{array}\right)
$$

where $A$ block is the contribution from the pure gauginos terms, $B$ block is the contribution from the gaugino and $\nu_{i}^{c}$ mixing terms. We suppress all other insignificant entries to zeros. For simplicity, we will treat the entries as scalars. Then, the eigenvalue equation is

$$
\begin{equation*}
-\lambda(A-\lambda)(R M-\lambda)+B^{2} \lambda-(A-\lambda) D^{2}=0 \tag{VI.4.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

The equation is simplified to

$$
\begin{equation*}
-\lambda^{3}+(R M+A) \lambda^{2}+\left(B^{2}-R M A+D^{2}\right)-A D^{2}=0 \tag{VI.4.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

As we are interested in the masses of the lightest neutrinos which are very small, we approximate $\lambda^{3} \approx 0$ and get

$$
\begin{equation*}
(R M+A) \lambda^{2}+\left(B^{2}-R M A+D^{2}\right)+-A D^{2}=0 \tag{VI.4.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Then, the solution is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lambda=\frac{-K \pm \sqrt{K^{2}+4 A D^{2}(R M+A)}}{2(R M+A)} . \tag{VI.4.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $K=B^{2}-R M A+D^{2}$
VI.4.1: Case A: $B^{2} \ll R M A$

If we assume $B^{2} \ll R M A$, then $K \approx-R M A$. So, we can make the approximation

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lambda \approx \frac{R M A \pm \sqrt{(R M A)^{2}+4 A D^{2}(R M+A)}}{2(R M+A)} \tag{VI.4.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

As $D^{2} \ll R M A$, we find

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lambda \approx \frac{1}{2(R M+A)}\left(R M A \pm R M A\left(1+\frac{2 A D^{2}(R M+A)}{(R M A)^{2}}\right)\right) \tag{VI.4.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

The see-saw mechanism is apparent in this approximation. The smaller eigenvalue (ignore sign) is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lambda \approx \frac{D^{2}}{R M} \tag{VI.4.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

This is the same as the see-saw approximation of the light eigenvalue of the pure neutrino matrix $M_{\nu}^{6 \times 6}$.

The assumption $B^{2} \ll R M A$ is in fact well motivated. The mixing terms $B$ get contribution from $\left\langle\tilde{\nu}_{i}\right\rangle$ while $R M$ gets contribution from $\left\langle\tilde{\nu}_{i}\right\rangle^{2}$. So both $B^{2}$ and $R M A$ are propotional to $\left\langle\tilde{\nu}_{i}\right\rangle^{2}$. If gaugino mass is heavy enough, this inequality will be satisfied

Of course, the above argument oversimplifies the matrix nature of the entries. It would be interesting to study their full effects in detail in future works. For the scope of this paper,
however, we will focus on the neutrino sub-matrix $M_{\nu}^{6 \times 6}$ for computing the light neutrino masses for case A.
VI.4.2: Case B: $B^{2} \gg R M A$

When the suppression factors in $R M$ are too large, or the mass terms of the gauginos in $A$ are not big enough, we have $B^{2} \gg R M A$, and the solutions of the eigenvalue equation in VI.4.3 become

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lambda \approx \frac{-B^{2} \pm \sqrt{B^{4}+4 A D^{2}(R M+A)}}{2(R M+A)} \tag{VI.4.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

where we have used $K \approx B^{2}$. The lightest eigenvalue becomes

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lambda \approx \frac{D^{2}}{\left(B^{2} / A\right)} \tag{VI.4.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

This is still the see-saw mechanism. In fact, $B^{2} / A$ is proportional to the $\left\langle\tilde{\nu}_{i}\right\rangle^{2}$ just as $R M$ in case A . The difference in case B is the involvement of gaugino mass terms and the values of gauge couplings, replacing the factor $C / m_{p l}$ of $R M$ in case A.

$$
\begin{equation*}
R M \sim \frac{C}{m_{p l}}\left\langle\tilde{\nu}_{i}\right\rangle^{2} \quad \leftrightarrow \quad \frac{B^{2}}{A} \sim \frac{g^{2}}{M_{g}}\left\langle\tilde{\nu}_{i}\right\rangle^{2} \tag{VI.4.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $g$ is a gauge coupling, and $M_{g}$ is a gaugino mass. Therefore, when analyzing the masses of light neutrinos, we will try to apply the argument from case A to case B. In Sec. VI.6, VI.7, VI.8, and VI.9, we will consider the neutrino masses from case A. In Sec. VI.10, we will argue to use a similar method for case B.
VI.4.3: Case C: $B^{2} \approx R M A$

This is a special case. If $B^{2}-R M A \approx 0$, then the texture matrix in (VI.4.1) degenerates and implies a zero eigenvalue. Thar means the lightest neutrino mass is zero. Then, from the mass gap, we can say right the way the masses of the two heavier light neutrinos are about 0.05 eV and $0.009 \mathrm{eV}(0.05 \mathrm{eV}$ and 0.05 eV$))$ for normal (inverted) hierarchy.

Otherwise, if $B^{2}-R M A$ has some significant non-zero values that are not covered in case A and case B, we leave the analysis to future work.

## VI.5: VEVs of right-handed neutrinos and their conjugates

In order to explicitly write down the entries for $M_{\nu}^{6 \times 6}$, in this section we will consider a semi-general method to give VEVs to right-handed neutrinos and their conjugates.

## VI.5.1: Case 1: No Mixing

First, we consider a standard superpotential that gives rise to the VEVs of right-handed neutrinos and theirs conjugates without mixing of families

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mu \nu_{i}^{c} \nu_{i}+\frac{C_{n, 0,0}}{m_{p l}^{2 n-3}}\left(\nu_{i}^{c} \nu_{i}\right)^{n} \tag{VI.5.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\mu=m_{3 / 2} \frac{s}{m_{p l}}=\mathcal{O}\left(10^{3}\right) \mathrm{GeV}$ with $m_{3 / 2}=\mathcal{O}\left(10^{4}\right) \mathrm{GeV}$ is the mass of gravitino, $\frac{s}{m_{p l}} \equiv$ 0.1 GeV is a generic moduli VEVs contribution[7], $C$ is dimensionless. The latter should be determined completely from the value of the moduli if we have a complete description of $G_{2}$ manifold. Unfortunately, we will use this estimated value due to our lack of knowledge for a complete $G_{2}$ structure.

D-flat directions implies

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{i} q_{i}^{j}\left(\left|\left\langle\tilde{\nu}_{i}^{c}\right\rangle\right|^{2}-\left|\left\langle\tilde{\nu}_{i}\right\rangle\right|^{2}\right)-\xi_{j}=0 \tag{VI.5.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

for $j=b, c, d, Y$ and $\xi$ 's are from Fayet-Iliopoulos terms. F-flat directions give (suppressing VEVs notation to decluster)

$$
\begin{align*}
\mu \nu_{i}^{c}+\frac{n C_{n, 0,0}}{m_{p l}^{2 n-3}}\left(\nu_{i}^{c}\right)^{n}\left(\nu_{i}\right)^{n-1} & =0  \tag{VI.5.3}\\
\mu \nu_{i}+\frac{n C_{n, 0,0}}{m_{p l}^{2 n-3}}\left(\nu_{i}^{c}\right)^{n-1}\left(\bar{\nu}_{i}^{c}\right)^{n} & =0 \tag{VI.5.4}
\end{align*}
$$

The VEVs for $\tilde{\nu}_{i}^{c}$ can be problematic because they can create terms such as $y\left\langle\tilde{\nu}^{c}\right\rangle H^{u} L$ which may spoil Higgs physics. On the other hand, large VEVs for $\nu_{i}$ are needed to generate large Majorana terms for conjugate right-handed neutrinos and hence see-saw mechanism. Thus, we consider $\left\langle\tilde{\nu}_{i}^{c}\right\rangle=\epsilon_{i}\left\langle\tilde{\nu}_{i}\right\rangle$. From F-terms, this will imply

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\langle\tilde{\nu}_{i}^{c}\right\rangle=\epsilon_{i}\left\langle\tilde{\nu}_{i}\right\rangle=\sqrt{\epsilon_{i}}\left(-\frac{\mu m_{p l}^{2 n-3}}{n C_{n, 0,0}}\right)^{\frac{1}{2(n-1)}} \tag{VI.5.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

Plugging this into the D-term, we get a restriction for Fayet-Iliopoulos coefficients.

$$
\begin{align*}
\xi_{b} & =\left(\epsilon_{1}^{2}-1\right)\left\langle\tilde{\nu}_{1}\right\rangle-\left(\epsilon_{2}^{2}-1\right)\left\langle\tilde{\nu}_{2}\right\rangle  \tag{VI.5.6}\\
\xi_{c} & =-\sum_{i=1}^{3}\left(\epsilon_{i}^{2}-1\right)\left\langle\tilde{\nu}_{i}\right\rangle  \tag{VI.5.7}\\
\xi_{d} & =-5 \sum_{i=1}^{3}\left(\epsilon_{i}^{2}-1\right)\left\langle\tilde{\nu}_{i}\right\rangle  \tag{VI.5.8}\\
\xi_{Y} & =0 \tag{VI.5.9}
\end{align*}
$$

This cannot give too much texture to Majorana terms without tuning $C_{n, 0,0}$. From the observed data, as we will see later, a rich texture is needed. Therefore, it is inviting to consider the mixing case.

## VI.5.2: Case 2: Mixing with Two Families

Consider the simplest mixing superpotential

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mu \nu_{i} \nu_{i}^{c}+\mu \nu_{j} \nu_{j}^{c}+\frac{C_{n-k, k, 0}}{m_{p l}^{2 n-3}}\left(\nu_{i} \nu_{i}^{c}\right)^{n-k}\left(\nu_{j} \nu_{j}^{c}\right)^{k} . \tag{VI.5.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

The D-flat equations are the same as in Eq. VI.5.2. Again we consider $\left\langle\tilde{\nu}_{i}^{c}\right\rangle=\epsilon_{i}\left\langle\tilde{\nu}_{i}\right\rangle$. F-flat directions give

$$
\begin{align*}
\mu \nu_{i}+(n-k) \frac{C_{n-k, k, 0}}{m_{p l}^{2 n-3}}\left(\nu_{i}\right)^{n-k}\left(\nu_{j} \nu_{j}^{c}\right)^{k}\left(\nu_{i}^{c}\right)^{n-k-1} & =0  \tag{VI.5.11}\\
\mu \nu_{j}+(k) \frac{C_{n-k, k, 0}}{m_{p l}^{2 n-3}}\left(\nu_{i} \nu_{i}^{c}\right)^{n-k}\left(\nu_{j}\right)^{k}\left(\nu_{j}^{c}\right)^{k-1} & =0 \tag{VI.5.12}
\end{align*}
$$

Interchange $\nu \leftrightarrow \bar{\nu}$.
which imply

$$
\begin{align*}
& \left\langle\tilde{\nu}_{i}^{c}\right\rangle=\epsilon_{i}\left\langle\tilde{\nu}_{i}\right\rangle=\sqrt{\epsilon_{i}}\left[-\frac{\mu}{C_{n-k, k, 0}} \frac{(n-k)^{k-1}}{k^{k}} m_{p l}^{2 n-3}\right]^{\frac{1}{2(n-1)}},  \tag{VI.5.14}\\
& \left\langle\tilde{\nu}_{j}^{c}\right\rangle=\epsilon_{j}\left\langle\tilde{\nu}_{j}\right\rangle=\sqrt{\epsilon_{j}}\left[-\frac{\mu}{C_{n-k, k, 0}} \frac{k^{n-k-1}}{(n-k)^{n-k}} m_{p l}^{2 n-3}\right]^{\frac{1}{2(n-1)}} . \tag{VI.5.15}
\end{align*}
$$

A hierarchy for Majorana terms is possible here as right-handed neutrinos from different families get different VEVs.

## VI.5.3: Case 3: Mixing with Three Families

We can consider the simplest mixing of three families in the superpotential

$$
\begin{equation*}
\mu \nu_{1}^{c} \nu_{1}+\mu \nu_{2}^{c} \nu_{2}+\mu \nu_{3} \nu_{3}^{c}+\frac{C_{h, k, l}}{m_{p l}^{2 n-3}}\left(\nu_{1} \nu_{1}^{c}\right)^{h}\left(\nu_{2} \nu_{2}^{c}\right)^{k}\left(\nu_{3} \nu_{3}^{c}\right)^{l} \tag{VI.5.16}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $h+k+l=n$. The D-flat equations are the same as in Eq. VI.5.2. Again we consider $\left\langle\tilde{\nu}_{i}^{c}\right\rangle=\epsilon_{i}\left\langle\tilde{\nu}_{i}\right\rangle$. Then, F-term equations are

$$
\begin{array}{r}
\mu+\frac{h C_{h, k, l}}{m_{p l}^{2 n-3}}\left(\nu_{1}^{c} \nu_{1}\right)^{h-1}\left(\nu_{2}^{c} \nu_{2}\right)^{k}\left(\nu_{3}^{c} \nu_{3}\right)^{l}=0, \\
\text { Permute } 3 \text { pairs }(1, h),(2, k), \text { and }(3, l), \\
\text { permute } \nu \leftrightarrow \bar{\nu} . \tag{VI.5.19}
\end{array}
$$

The solution is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\langle\tilde{\nu}_{i}^{c}\right\rangle=\epsilon_{i}\left\langle\tilde{\nu}_{i}\right\rangle=\sqrt{\epsilon_{i}}\left[-\frac{\mu h^{k+l+1} m_{p l}^{2 n-3}}{C_{h, k, l} k^{k} l^{l}}\right]^{\frac{1}{2(n-1)}} \tag{VI.5.20}
\end{equation*}
$$

Permute 3 pairs $(1, h),(2, k)$, and $(3, l)$.

Note that in all of the above cases, in practice, we can drop the negative signs inside the brackets as they can be absorbed as a phase in the oscillation matrix of neutrinos. Another scenario is that one of the right-handed neutrinos completely decouples from the other two. The superpotential will then be a sum of case 1 and case 2 , and the solutions are the same as case 1 and case 2 .

## VI.6: Mass Matrix from Neutrino Mixing (case A)

## VI.6.1: Mass Matrix Setup

We investigate the matrix with only right-handed neutrinos and left-handed neutrinos. Using the moduli values computed from quarks and charged lepton mass in $[72]^{2}$, we compute Dirac

[^19]mass terms from the cubic Yukawa couplings at tree level
\[

$$
\begin{align*}
W_{\text {tree }} & \supset y_{123} H_{1}^{u} L_{2} \nu_{3}^{c}+y_{132} H_{1}^{u} L_{3} \nu_{2}^{c}+y_{312} H_{3}^{u} L_{1} \nu_{2}^{c} \\
& +y_{321} H_{3}^{u} L_{2} \nu_{1}^{c}+y_{213} H_{2}^{u} L_{1} \nu_{3}^{c}+y_{231} H_{2}^{u} L_{3} \nu_{1}^{c} \\
& +y_{333} H_{3}^{u} L_{3} \nu_{3}^{c} \tag{VI.6.1}
\end{align*}
$$
\]

where $y_{i j k}$ 's are computed from the moduli. The Yukawa couplings $y_{i j k}$ form a matrix

$$
Y=\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
0 & 6.93 \times 10^{-7} & 4.52 \times 10^{-10}  \tag{VI.6.2}\\
7.25 \times 10^{-1} & 0 & 3.19 \times 10^{-1} \\
2.53 \times 10^{-5} & 1.71 \times 10^{-2} & 3.22 \times 10^{-2}
\end{array}\right)
$$

When the Higgs get VEVs, the Dirac terms are approximately

$$
D=\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
0 & 2.32 \times 10^{-5} & -3.28 \times 10^{-8}  \tag{VI.6.3}\\
2.42 \times 10^{1} & 0 & -4.93 \times 10^{1} \\
-1.83 \times 10^{-3} & -2.64 \times 10^{0} & 1.08 \times 10^{0}
\end{array}\right) \mathrm{GeV}
$$

The first two diagonal entries vanish because there are no charge invariant terms for those. This comes down to the fact that when breaking from $E_{8}$, particles from the same family have the same $b$ charge. If their charges are non-zero, they cannot couple in cubic level, which is the case for the first two families with $b$ charge $\pm 1$. The explanation for the size of the rest is complicated as the Yukawa is related to the moduli by exponentiated inverse matrices. However, the significant difference in sizes of the entries can be traced back to the hierarchy of the up-type quarks whose $b$ and $c$ charges are the same as the neutrinos.

The Majorana contribution comes form the superpotential

$$
\begin{equation*}
W \supset y \nu_{i}^{c} \nu_{i} \nu_{j}^{c} \nu_{j} \tag{VI.6.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

which was discussed in Sec. VI.3. When right-handed neutrino factors $\nu_{i}$ get VEVs, terms of the form in Eq. (VI.6.4) constitute the Majorana mass matrix $R M$. The mass matrix is
in the basis of $\left\{L_{1}, L_{2}, L_{3}, \nu_{1}^{c}, \nu_{2}^{c}, \nu_{3}^{c}\right\}$

$$
\left(\begin{array}{cc}
0 & D \\
D^{\top} & R M
\end{array}\right)
$$

where $R M$ is the conjugate right-handed Majorana matrix. Notice that $R M$ must be symmetric. $R M$ gets large entries when right-handed neutrinos get VEVs. Before computing the VEVs for right-handed neutrinos through a variety of methods, we want to see if it is possible to get a sensible left-handed neutrino hierarchy and flavor-ratio for the mass eigenstates. According to the experimental data, orthonormal eigenvectors are approximately $V \equiv\left(\begin{array}{lll}v_{1} & v_{2} & v_{3}\end{array}\right)$ where $v_{i}$ is $i^{\text {th }}$ column of

$$
V=\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
c_{13} c_{12} & c_{13} s_{12} & s_{13}  \tag{VI.6.5}\\
-c_{23} s_{12}-s_{13} s_{23} c_{12} & c_{23} c_{12}-s_{13} s_{23} s_{12} & c_{13} s_{23} \\
s_{23} s_{12}-s_{13} c_{23} c_{12} & -s_{23} c_{12}-s_{13} c_{23} s_{12} & c_{13} c_{23}
\end{array}\right)
$$

where $c_{i j}=\cos \left(\theta_{i j}\right), s_{i j}=\sin \left(\theta_{i j}\right)$, and we omitted the possible phase for simplicity. We use the oscillation angles

$$
\begin{equation*}
\theta_{12}=33.44^{\circ} \quad \theta_{13}=8.57^{\circ} \quad \theta_{23}=49.0^{\circ} \tag{VI.6.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

Assuming normal hierarchy, the eigenvalues are

$$
\Lambda \equiv\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
m_{1} & 0 & 0  \tag{VI.6.7}\\
0 & m_{2} & 0 \\
0 & 0 & m_{3}
\end{array}\right)=\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
x & 0 & 0 \\
0 & \sqrt{\Delta m_{21}^{2}+x^{2}} & 0 \\
0 & 0 & \sqrt{\Delta m_{31}^{2}+x^{2}}
\end{array}\right)
$$

where $x$ is the mass of the lightest left-handed neutrino and the mass-square differences are

$$
\begin{equation*}
\Delta m_{31}^{2}=2.32 \times 10^{-21} \mathrm{GeV}^{2} \quad \Delta m_{21}^{2}=7.6 \times 10^{-23} \mathrm{GeV}^{2} \tag{VI.6.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

Finally, we denote the remaining components of the left-handed neutrino eigenvectors as

$$
E \equiv\left(\begin{array}{lll}
\epsilon_{1} & \epsilon_{2} & \epsilon_{3} \tag{VI.6.9}
\end{array}\right)
$$

where $\epsilon_{i}$ 's are 3 d column vectors whose entries we expect to be small but non-zero. The final eigenvector expression is

$$
\underbrace{\left(\begin{array}{cc}
0 & D  \tag{VI.6.10}\\
D^{\top} & R M
\end{array}\right)}_{6 \times 6} \underbrace{\binom{V}{E}}_{6 \times 3}=\binom{V}{E} \Lambda
$$

## VI.7: Majorana Mass Matrix (case A)

## VI.7.1: Majorana Mass Matrix from See-Saw Mechanism

Performing the explicit multiplication in Eq. VI.6.10, we get

$$
\begin{array}{r}
D E=V \Lambda \Longrightarrow E=D^{-1} V \Lambda, \\
D^{\top} V+R M E=E \Lambda \Longrightarrow R M D^{-1} V \Lambda=E \Lambda-D^{\top} V \tag{VI.7.2}
\end{array}
$$

The lightest neutrino cannot be massless, otherwise $\left(R M D^{-1} V-E\right) \Lambda$ would have a vanishing third column while $D^{\top}$ does not. Thus, $\Lambda$ is invertible. Combining the two equations we get an expression for $R M$

$$
\begin{equation*}
R M=D^{-1} V \Lambda V^{-1} D-D^{\top} V \Lambda^{-1} V^{-1} D \tag{VI.7.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

Notice that as $\Lambda$ has very small diagonal entries, the second term is dominant

$$
\begin{equation*}
R M \approx-D^{\top} V \Lambda^{-1} V^{-1} D \tag{VI.7.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

For convenience, we absorb negative signs by a phase in $V$. We can investigate the small $x$ regime by writing

$$
\begin{equation*}
R M_{i j} \approx\left(D^{\top} V\right)_{i 1} \frac{1}{x}\left(V^{-1} D\right)_{1 j}=\frac{\left(V^{-1} D\right)_{1 i}\left(V^{-1} D\right)_{1 j}}{x} \tag{VI.7.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

Thus, at small $x$, the Majorana terms will behave as a hyperbolic curve with respect to the lightest neutrino mass $x$, and the texture of $R M$, modulo the magnitude of $x$, is given by
the first column of $V^{-1} D$ which is fixed.
When $m_{1}$ is close to the largest mass splitting, all $m_{i}$ have the same magnitude and the approximation becomes

$$
\begin{align*}
R M_{i j} & \approx \sum_{k}\left(D^{\top} V\right)_{i k} \frac{1}{m_{k}}\left(V^{-1} D\right)_{k j}  \tag{VI.7.6}\\
& =\frac{\sum_{k}\left(V^{-1} D\right)_{k i}\left(V^{-1} D\right)_{k j}}{x} \tag{VI.7.7}
\end{align*}
$$

which is also a hyperbola with respect to $x$, although the texture of $R M$ relies on all of $V^{-1} D$ here.

To build an intuition on the magnitude of $R M$, we try plugging in $x=\sqrt{\Delta m_{21}^{2}}=10^{-11.5}$ GeV which is about the size of the second mass splitting . The diagonalized left handed neutrino mass matrix is $\operatorname{diag}\left(4.9 \times 10^{-5}, 8.6 \times 10^{-6}, 3.2 \times 10^{-12}\right)$, absorbing negative signs by a phase in $V$, we get

$$
R M=\left(\begin{array}{lll}
6.6 \times 10^{13} & 4.6 \times 10^{12} & 1.4 \times 10^{14}  \tag{VI.7.8}\\
4.6 \times 10^{12} & 5.8 \times 10^{11} & 9.5 \times 10^{12} \\
1.4 \times 10^{14} & 9.5 \times 10^{12} & 2.8 \times 10^{14}
\end{array}\right) \mathrm{GeV}
$$

which is a symmetric matrix as we wanted. We will see that this matrix can be constructed with appropriate right-handed neutrino VEVs. For readability, the above entries of this Majorana matrix are being rounded from the precise values needed for the hierarchy. In fact, the hierarchy and oscillation of left-handed neutrinos can only be achieved with a high level of precision in the entries of $R M$. We cannot round the entries up because that would destroy the final hierarchy and oscillation. This is a consequence of Eq. VI.7.2, where the entries of $R M$ are in general much larger than those of $\Lambda$, independent of $E$. So for the equality in Eq.VI.7.2 to happen, entries of $R M$ need to cancel out in $R M E$ precisely to very small non-zero numbers.

## VI.7.2: Majorana mass from VEVs of $\nu_{i}^{c}$

We will argue that contributions beyond the order of Eq. (VI.3.5) will be insignificant. In fact, the contribution from order $2 N$ in the superpotential is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sum_{i, j} \frac{C_{N, N, 0}}{m_{p l}^{4 N-3}}\left\langle\tilde{\nu}_{i}\right\rangle^{N}\left\langle\tilde{\nu}_{j}\right\rangle^{N}\left\langle\tilde{\nu}_{i}^{c}\right\rangle^{N-1}\left\langle\tilde{\nu}_{j}^{c}\right\rangle^{N-1} \nu_{i}^{c} \nu_{j}^{c} \tag{VI.7.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

Plugging in the VEVs from Eq. (VI.5.20), the coefficients are of the form

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{C_{N, N, 0} m_{p l}^{\frac{n-2 N}{n-1}}}{\epsilon}\left[(h k)^{l+1} h^{k-h} k^{h-k} \frac{\mu^{2}}{C_{n}^{2}}\right]^{\frac{2 N-1}{2(n-1)}} \tag{VI.7.10}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $h, k, l$ are permuted to get other terms. Instead of separate $n_{i}$ and $n_{j}$ for $\left\langle\tilde{\nu}_{i}^{c}\right\rangle$ and $\left\langle\tilde{\nu_{j}}\right\rangle$, we can consider $n_{i}=n_{j}=n$ for some fractional $n$. Assume $\frac{C_{N, N, 0}}{C_{N+1, N+1,0}} \approx \mathcal{O}(1)$. The $h, k, l$ dependent part is also approximately $\mathcal{O}(1)$, and the coefficient is decreasing with respect to $N$ if

$$
\begin{equation*}
\frac{\mu}{C_{n} m_{p l}}<1 \tag{VI.7.11}
\end{equation*}
$$

which implies

$$
\begin{equation*}
C_{n}>\frac{\mu}{m_{p l}} \approx \frac{10^{3}}{10^{18}}=10^{-15} . \tag{VI.7.12}
\end{equation*}
$$

Thus, as long as the suppression coefficient is not too small, the main contribution is always at quadric order. Henceforth, we assume $C \in\left[10^{-15}, 1\right]$ which is consistent with Acharya et al [7].

## VI.8: Limit for Neutrinos (Case A)

## VI.8.1: Upper Bound for $\epsilon_{i}$

When the right-handed neutrinos get VEVs, along with familiar Dirac terms of the form

$$
\begin{equation*}
y\left\langle H_{j}^{u}\right\rangle L_{i} \nu_{k}^{c} \tag{VI.8.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

there are terms of the from

$$
\begin{equation*}
y\left\langle\tilde{\nu}_{k}^{c}\right\rangle L_{i} H_{j}^{u} . \tag{VI.8.2}
\end{equation*}
$$

which may potentially spoil the Higgs' physics. Therefore, it is desirable for the couplings to be smaller than those of the $\mu$ terms $\mu H_{i}^{u} H_{j}^{d}$ (generated at electroweak scale) and the Dirac terms. As our computed Dirac coupling $y$ in Eq. (VI.6.3) is $\mathcal{O}\left(10^{-8}\right) \mathrm{GeV}$ at the smallest while the largest lepton Yukawa coupling is $\mathcal{O}\left(10^{-1}\right)$. We need

$$
\begin{equation*}
y_{\max }\left\langle\tilde{\nu}^{c}\right\rangle L H^{u}<\left(y\left\langle H^{u}\right\rangle\right)_{\min } L \nu^{c} \tag{VI.8.3}
\end{equation*}
$$

where $\left(y\left\langle H^{u}\right\rangle\right)_{\text {min }}=\mathcal{O}\left(10^{-8}\right) \mathrm{GeV}$, and $y_{\max }=\mathcal{O}\left(10^{-1}\right) \mathrm{GeV}$. It is sufficient to have the right-handed neutrino VEVs as

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left\langle\tilde{v}_{i}^{c}\right\rangle \lesssim 10^{-7} \mathrm{GeV} . \tag{VI.8.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

Plugging the result from Eq. (VI.5.20) in, we get

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sqrt{\epsilon_{i}}<10^{-7}\left[\frac{\mu h^{k+l+1} m_{p l}^{2 n-3}}{C_{h, k, l} k^{k} l^{l}}\right]^{\frac{-1}{2(n-1)}} \tag{VI.8.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

which implies

$$
\begin{equation*}
\sqrt{\epsilon_{i}} \lesssim 10^{-7}\left[\frac{\mu m_{p l}^{2 n-3}}{C_{h, k, l}}\right]^{\frac{-1}{2(n-1)}} \tag{VI.8.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

where we have again assumed the $k, h, l$ dependent factor to be approximately $\mathcal{O}(1)$.

## VI.8.2: Normal Hierarchy Analysis

Using the upper bound for $\epsilon$ we can find a lower bound for the Majorana mass term

$$
\begin{align*}
& R M_{i j}=\frac{C_{1,1}}{m_{p l}}\left\langle\tilde{\nu}_{i}\right\rangle\left\langle\tilde{\nu}_{j}\right\rangle=\frac{C_{1,1} m_{p l}^{\frac{n_{i j}-2}{n_{j}-1}} \mu^{\frac{1}{n_{i j}-1}}}{\epsilon C_{h, k, l}^{\frac{1}{n_{i j}-1}}} \\
& \geq 10^{14}\left[\frac{\mu m_{p l}^{2 n_{i j}-3}}{C_{h, k, l}}\right]^{\frac{1}{\left(n_{i j}-1\right)}} \frac{C_{1,1} m_{p l}^{\frac{n_{i j}-2}{n_{j i}-1}} \mu^{\frac{1}{n_{i j}-1}}}{C_{h, k, l}^{\frac{1}{n_{i j}-1}}} \\
&=\frac{10^{14} \times C_{1,1} \times m_{p l}^{\frac{3 n_{i j}-1}{n_{i j}-1}} \times \mu^{\frac{2}{n_{i j}-1}}}{C_{h, k, l}^{\frac{2}{n_{i j}-1}}} \tag{VI.8.7}
\end{align*}
$$

Instead of considering separate $n_{i}$ and $n_{j}$ for $\left\langle\tilde{\nu}_{i}\right\rangle$ and $\left\langle\tilde{\nu_{j}}\right\rangle$, we again consider $n_{i}=n_{j}=n_{i j}$ for some fractional $n_{i j}$. Following the analysis of the previous section, we find

$$
\begin{equation*}
\left(D^{\top} V \Lambda^{-1} V^{-1} D\right)_{i j}=R M_{i j}=\frac{C_{2,1}}{m_{p l}}\left\langle\tilde{\nu}_{i}\right\rangle\left\langle\tilde{\nu}_{j}\right\rangle . \tag{VI.8.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

We will analysis the upper bound for $m_{3}$ in many scenarios and deduce the rest of the neutrinos masses accordingly. For convenience, we let $m_{1}=\frac{1}{k} m_{3}$ and $m_{2}=\frac{1}{h} m_{3}$. Then we

$$
\begin{array}{r}
\frac{1}{m_{3}}\left[\left(D^{\top} V\right)_{i 3}\left(V^{-1} D\right)_{3 j}+h\left(D^{\top} V\right)_{i 2}\left(V^{-1} D\right)_{2 j}\right. \\
\left.+k\left(D^{\top} V\right)_{i 1}\left(V^{-1} D\right)_{1 j}\right]=R M_{i j} \tag{VI.8.9}
\end{array}
$$

which implies

$$
\begin{array}{r}
m_{3}=\frac{1}{R M_{i j}}\left(\left(D^{\top} V\right)_{i 3}\left(V^{-1} D\right)_{3 j}+h\left(D^{\top} V\right)_{i 2}\left(V^{-1} D\right)_{2 j}+k\left(D^{\top} V\right)_{i 1}\left(V^{-1} D\right)_{1 j}\right) \\
=\frac{1}{R M_{i j}}\left(\left(D^{\top} V\right)_{i 3}\left(D^{\top} V\right)_{j 3}+h\left(D^{\top} V\right)_{i 2}\left(D^{\top} V\right)_{j 2}+k\left(D^{\top} V\right)_{i 1}\left(D^{\top} V\right)_{j 1}\right) \tag{VI.8.11}
\end{array}
$$

Now, before we use inequality in Eq. VI.8.7 to estimate the bound, we should consider specific limiting cases and get the best bound. Explicit form of $D^{T} V$ will be useful

$$
D^{T} V=\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
-11.58 & 12.91 & 16.92  \tag{VI.8.12}\\
-0.77 & 1.72 & -1.84 \\
23.88 & -26.97 & -33.68
\end{array}\right) \mathrm{GeV}
$$

First, we consider all left-handed neutrino masses are of the same order, i.e, $k=h=\mathcal{O}(1)$. For all $i, j$, the numerator of Eq. (VI.8.10) is at most $\mathcal{O}\left(10^{3}\right) \mathrm{GeV}^{2}$, and the upper bound is

$$
\begin{equation*}
m_{3} \leq \frac{10^{3}}{R M_{i j}} \leq \frac{10^{3} C_{h, k, l}^{\frac{2}{n-1}}}{10^{14} \times C_{1,1} \times m_{p l}^{\frac{3 n-5}{n-1}} \times \mu^{\frac{2}{n-1}}}<10^{-20} \mathrm{GeV} \tag{VI.8.13}
\end{equation*}
$$

for all $n \geq 2$ where we use $C \in\left[10^{-15}, 1\right]$. As the largest mass splitting is $10^{-10.5} \mathrm{GeV}$, it rules out the possibility of equal magnitude for left-handed neutrino masses.

A second case is when $m_{1}$ and $m_{2}$ are of the same magnitude but much smaller then $m_{3}$. Then $m_{3}$ will be approximately the mass splitting which is $10^{-10.5} \mathrm{GeV}$ and $h \approx k \gg 1$. However, due to the smaller mass splitting about $10^{-11.5} \mathrm{GeV}$, we need $m_{1} \approx m_{2} \geq 10^{-11.5}$ which implies $h \approx k<10$. For all $i, j$, we find the numerator is $\mathcal{O}\left(10^{4}\right) \mathrm{GeV}^{2}$ at most

$$
\begin{equation*}
m_{3} \leq \frac{10^{4}}{R M_{i j}} \leq \frac{10 C_{h, k, l}^{\frac{2}{n-1}}}{10^{14} \times C_{1,1} \times m_{p l}^{\frac{3 n-5}{n-1}} \times \mu^{\frac{2}{n-1}}}<10^{-19} \mathrm{GeV} \tag{VI.8.14}
\end{equation*}
$$

Thus, $m_{3}$ fails to satisfy the mass splitting constraint in this case.

Finally, when $m_{1} \ll m_{2}, m_{3}$, the magnitude of each entry in $R M_{i j}$ is determined by the magnitude of $m_{1}$. The estimate in Eq. VI.8.10 will be dominated by $k$ and provide an upper bound larger than the mass splitting. Hence this is a viable case that agrees with experimental observation. Nonetheless, as mentioned in Sec. VI.7, $m_{3}$ cannot be massless in this model. Thus, in general, we predict the lightest neutrino to be massive but light compared the other two. This implies

$$
\begin{equation*}
m_{3} \approx 0.05 \mathrm{eV} \quad m_{2} \approx 0.009 \mathrm{eV} \tag{VI.8.15}
\end{equation*}
$$

## VI.8.3: Inverted Hierarchy Analysis

We can carry out a similar analysis for the inverted hierarchy of left handed neutrino masses. Notice that the oscillations for each label $i$ for $m_{i}$ do not change. The only thing we need to modify is the diagonal mass matrix

$$
\Lambda \equiv\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
m_{1} & 0 & 0  \tag{VI.8.16}\\
0 & m_{2} & 0 \\
0 & 0 & m_{3}
\end{array}\right)=\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
x & 0 & 0 \\
0 & \sqrt{x^{2}+\Delta m_{21}^{2}} & 0 \\
0 & 0 & \sqrt{x^{2}-\Delta m_{31}^{2}}
\end{array}\right)
$$

As $m_{2}$ is the largest, we will mimic the previous analysis as $m_{1}=\frac{1}{h} m_{2}$ and $m_{3}=\frac{1}{k} m_{2}$ and end up with

$$
\begin{array}{r}
m_{2}=\frac{1}{R M_{i j}}\left(k\left(D^{\top} V\right)_{i 3}\left(V^{-1} D\right)_{3 j}+\left(D^{\top} V\right)_{i 2}\left(V^{-1} D\right)_{2 j}\right. \\
+
\end{array} \begin{array}{r} 
 \tag{VI.8.17}\\
\\
\left.\left(D^{\top} V\right)_{i 1}\left(V^{-1} D\right)_{1 j}\right) .
\end{array}
$$

First, we consider all masses are of the same order, i.e, $k=h=O(1)$. Then, for all $i, j$, we arrive at the same conclusion of $m_{2}<10^{-20} \mathrm{GeV}$ which fails to satisfy the mass splitting constraint. Unlike the normal hierarchy, the second case where $m_{1} \approx m_{3} \ll m_{2}$ is not possible with inverted hierarchy. As the large mass splitting $\Delta m_{32}^{2}$ requires $m_{1} \approx m_{3}>10^{10.5} \mathrm{GeV}$, the small mass splitting $\Delta m_{12}^{2} \ll \Delta m_{32}^{2}$ will imply $m_{2} \approx m_{1}$. Again, we arrive at the conclusion the lightest left handed neutrino, in this case $m_{3}$, is light compared to the other two. This implies

$$
\begin{equation*}
m_{1} \approx m_{2} \approx 0.05 \mathrm{eV} \tag{VI.8.18}
\end{equation*}
$$

The results from both hierarchies are consistent with the current knowledge of light
neutrinos, for instance, the work of Gonzalo et al [74].

## VI.9: Heavy neutrino mass (Case A)

We can also extract some information about heavy neutrinos by considering the eigenvector equations similar to Eq. VI.6.10

$$
\left(\begin{array}{cc}
0 & D  \tag{VI.9.1}\\
D^{\top} & R M
\end{array}\right)\binom{V^{\prime}}{E^{\prime}}=\binom{V^{\prime}}{E^{\prime}} \Lambda^{\prime}
$$

where $\Lambda^{\prime}$ is the diagonal mass matrix of the heavy neutrinos. In contrast with light neutrinos, We expect $V^{\prime}$ to be small compared to $E^{\prime}$. Similarly to light neutrino case, we can pick $E$ to be orthonormal. This would imply

$$
\begin{align*}
D E^{\prime} & =V^{\prime} \Lambda^{\prime}  \tag{VI.9.2}\\
D^{\top} V^{\prime}+R M E^{\prime} & =E^{\prime} \Lambda^{\prime} \tag{VI.9.3}
\end{align*}
$$

As both $D$ and $V^{\prime}$ are small compared to $R M$ and $E^{\prime}$ respectively, we have the estimation

$$
\begin{equation*}
R M E^{\prime} \approx E^{\prime} \Lambda^{\prime} \tag{VI.9.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

or

$$
\begin{equation*}
E^{\prime-1} R M E^{\prime} \approx \Lambda^{\prime} \tag{VI.9.5}
\end{equation*}
$$

As $E^{\prime}$ is orthonormal, we conclude that $\Lambda^{\prime}$ is approximately the diagonalized matrix of $R M$. This means the lower bound for the heaviest eigenvalue is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lambda_{\max } \geq \frac{\operatorname{tr}(R M)}{3} \gtrsim 10^{14} \quad G e V \tag{VI.9.6}
\end{equation*}
$$

Using this, we can estimate the upper bound for the lightest of the heavy neutrinos.

$$
\begin{equation*}
\prod_{i=1,2,3} \lambda_{i}^{\text {heavy }}=\operatorname{det} R M \tag{VI.9.7}
\end{equation*}
$$

Hence,

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lambda_{\min }^{\text {heavy }} \leq\left(\frac{\operatorname{det}(R M)}{\lambda_{\max }}\right)^{\frac{1}{2}} \tag{VI.9.8}
\end{equation*}
$$

$\operatorname{det}(R M)$ is inversely proportional to the mass of the lightest neutrino, so in general $\operatorname{det}(R M)$ is not bounded above when the lightest neutrino becomes lighter and lighter. On the other hand, in the heaviest case, the lightest neutrino is about $10^{-11.5} \mathrm{GeV}$, $\operatorname{det}(R M)$ is about $\mathcal{O}\left(10^{39}\right)$. Then, the upper bound for the lightest heavy neutrino is

$$
\begin{equation*}
\lambda_{\min }^{\text {heavy }} \leq 10^{12.5} \quad \mathrm{GeV} \tag{VI.9.9}
\end{equation*}
$$

## VI.10: Analysis for case B

In Sec. VI.4, we see that the lightest neutrino masses of case B have similar structure to that of case A. In particular, in the simplified texture matrix, the see-saw mechanism is identical if we replace $R M$ by $B^{2} / A$. This is the same as replacing the factors $C / m_{p l}$ in $R M$ mass terms by $g^{2} / M_{g}$. We do not have the exact values of $g$ and $M_{g} . g$ and $M_{g}$ can be expected to be about $\mathcal{O}(0.1)-\mathcal{O}(1)$ [20] and $\mathcal{O}(100)-\mathcal{O}(1000) \mathrm{GeV}$ [10]. These numbers are not rigorously computed in M theory on $G_{2}$ manifold with $E_{8}$ singularities, so they can be different in future works.

As the analysis of a full mass matrix is too complicated, we will pursue a simplified way: repeat case A by replacing $R M$ matrix with a matrix $\overline{R M}$ whose entries are those of $R M$ with $C / m_{p l}$ replaced by $g^{2} / M_{g} \sim \mathcal{O}\left(10^{-5}\right)-\mathcal{O}\left(10^{-2}\right) \mathrm{GeV}^{-1}$.

$$
\begin{equation*}
\overline{R M}_{i j}=\frac{g^{2}}{M_{g}}\left\langle\tilde{\nu}_{i}\right\rangle\left\langle\tilde{\nu}_{j}\right\rangle, \tag{VI.10.1}
\end{equation*}
$$

and we consider simplifying the texture by

$$
\left(\begin{array}{ccc}
A & B & 0  \tag{VI.10.2}\\
B^{T} & R M & D \\
0 & D^{T} & 0
\end{array}\right) \rightarrow\left(\begin{array}{cc}
\overline{R M} & D \\
D^{T} & 0
\end{array}\right)
$$

This method is motivated by a point made by Acharya et al [7]. We expect the breaking of the extra $U(1)$ 's to transform a chiral superfield and a massless vector superfield into a single massive vector superfield. The degrees of freedom add up correctly and would mean
that below the $U(1)$ 's breaking scale we can take $\tilde{B}$ 's and the linear combination of $\nu_{i}^{c}$-states that break the $U(1)$ 's to be integrated out jointly. Then, the block matrix of $A, B$, and $R M$ will combine into a single Majorana matrix.

Similar to Eq. (VI.8.7), we get

$$
\begin{array}{r}
\overline{R M}_{i j}=\frac{g^{2}}{M_{g}} \frac{C_{1,1} m_{p l}^{\frac{2 n_{i j}-3}{n_{j}-1}} \mu^{\frac{1}{n_{i j}-1}}}{\epsilon C_{h, k, l}^{\frac{1}{n_{j}-1}}} \\
\geq 10^{14} \frac{g^{2}}{M_{g}}\left[\frac{\mu m_{p l}^{2 n_{i j}-3}}{C_{h, k, l}}\right]^{\frac{1}{\left.n_{i j}-1\right)}} \frac{m_{p l}^{\frac{2 n_{i j}-3}{n_{i j}-1}} \mu^{\frac{1}{n_{i j}-1}}}{C_{h, k, l}^{\frac{1}{n_{i j}-1}}} \\
=\frac{10^{14} \frac{g^{2}}{M_{g}} \times C_{1,1} \times m_{p l}^{\frac{4 n_{i j}-6}{n_{i j}-1}} \times \mu^{\frac{2}{n_{i j}-1}}}{C_{h, k, l}^{\frac{2}{n_{i j}-1}}} \tag{VI.10.3}
\end{array}
$$

Then, we can consider different scenarios for the normal hierachy as like in the previous section. First, we consider all left-handed neutrino masses are of the same order, i.e, $k=$ $h=\mathcal{O}(1)$. For all $i, j$ the numerator is $\mathcal{O}\left(10^{3}\right) \mathrm{GeV}^{2}$, and the upper bound is

$$
\begin{equation*}
m_{3} \approx \frac{10^{3}}{R M_{i j}} \leq \frac{10^{3} C_{h, k, l}^{\frac{2}{n-1}}}{10^{14} \times \frac{g^{2}}{M_{g}} \times C_{1,1} \times m_{p l}^{\frac{4 n-6}{n-1}} \times \mu^{\frac{2}{n-1}}}<10^{-26} \mathrm{GeV} \tag{VI.10.4}
\end{equation*}
$$

for all $n \geq 2$ where we use $C \in\left[10^{-15}, 1\right]$. As the largest mass splitting is $10^{-10.5} \mathrm{GeV}$, it rules out the possibility of equal magnitude for left-handed neutrino masses. We see that the bound for case B is even smaller then that of case A. This is the same for all other mass hierarchies in case B. Thus, case B has the same conclusion about the light neutrino masses as that of case A.

## VI.11: Conclusion

In this paper, our primary goal is to analyze the mass matrix of neutrinos using the result from a localized model of M-theory compactified on $G_{2}$ manifold with resolved $E_{8}$ singularity [72]. We learn in this work that the neutrinos originate in the need for the full content of the representations of the resolved $E_{8}$ singularity. Similar to the work of Acharya et al [7], there are two main contributions: pure neutrino mixing, and neutralinos and Higginos mixing with neutrinos. We consider several cases to simplify to analysis in this paper.

Dirac terms of the neutrino mass matrix are explicitly computed from the moduli of
the localized model on $G_{2}$ manifold. We computed the contribution on the cubic level. The texture of the neutrino masses is highly hierarchical as a result of the correlation to hierarchy from the up-type quark. From experimental data of the mixing angles and mass splittings, assuming the normal ordering, we can use the Dirac terms to compute the Majorana mass matrix as a function of the lightest neutrino mass.

The Kolda-Martin mechanism is the main theoretical tool to generate Majorana terms in this paper. In this picture, the right-handed neutrinos ( and their antiparticles) get VEVs and generate Majorana masses through quadric terms. The VEVs along with the Dirac terms and experimental data oscillation angles create an upper bound for the masses of lefthanded neutrinos. Considering this upper bound in both scenarios of normal and inverted hierarchies, we conclude that the last neutrino should always be light comparing the other two families regardless of the choice of hierarchy. However, the model and the computed Dirac terms generally forbid the lightest neutrino to be massless. The very light mass of the one of the neutrinos implies that the other two left-handed neutrinos have masses about 0.05 eV and $0.009 \mathrm{eV}(0.05 \mathrm{eV}$ and 0.05 eV$))$ for normal (inverted) hierarchy. On the other hand, we achieve some restrictions on heavy neutrinos. The bounds are not stringent enough to make a testable prediction.

For future work, we expect more predictive results when we understand better the contributions from the global structures which determine all the coefficients, including those being tunable in our local theory. Locally, it is also intriguing to explore the uniqueness of the solution. If other solutions exist, it is interesting to see the implication on physics, especially the neutrinos. As our work can be repeated for other solutions in a relatively straightforward way, it is inviting to examine a large class of solutions using bigger computational power.

# CHAPTER VII Summary and Future Directions 

## VII.1: Summary

M-theory is necessarily compactified on $G_{2}$ manifold with ADE singularities. By linearizing the local geometry of such manifolds, we used the quark masses to compute the local moduli. In our model, all three Higgs doublets should get a VEV. We see that the solution for the moduli is quite rare. This suggests the predictive ability of the global $G_{2}$ structure. Next, we use the computed moduli to compute Dirac terms for neutrino masses. We write down some scenarios for right-handed neutrinos to get a VEV and induce the see-saw mechanism for neutrinos. This leads us to the conclusion that all neutrinos must be massive, with an estimation that two left-handed neutrinos have masses about 0.05 eV and $0.009 \mathrm{eV}(0.05 \mathrm{eV}$ and 0.05 eV$)$ ) for the normal (inverted) hierarchy.

## VII.2: Future direction

Proton decay is a problem for many unified theories. With a higher rank gauge group, many theories have Higgs color triplets and allow unstable proton. Given the lower bound of proton decay experimentally determined to be at least $1.67 \times 10^{34}$ years [21], physical theories must suppress proton decay if there is any. From our moduli, we can readily compute possible proton decay. The interactions for proton decay in our model only happen in quadric terms or higher. When $S_{i}$ fields (see Table A.2) get VEVs, these terms can become cubic Yukawa couplings and contribute to tree-level interactions facilitating proton decay. There have been many qualitative arguments about proton decay in M theory [37, 8], but none has incorporated explicit numerical couplings into their analysis. It is interesting to study this in future works.

CP violation is also an important question in physics. The origin of this can come from the holomorphic nature of Yukawa coupling. Notice that we omitted the complex phase in our previous discussion. This phase come from the $G_{2}$ structure 3-form [40]. Including this
phase will require extra parametrization. Given how stringent $G_{2}$ manifold is, the theory is expected to have enough constraints to produce a predictive result.

The knowledge of global structure will determine all the physics, so expanding our model to a global structure is an inevitable path. Given the difficulty with the full global structure, we can take the first step with making the associative base $M_{3}$ a sphere. This is the local form of $G_{2}$ manifold from twisted connected sum. There has been some work about Mtheory on this kind of manifold [79]. So, it is interesting to see our moduli computation in this setting. The first and foremost challenge is how to parametrize the singularity fibration on the 3 -sphere base. We leave this to future work.

## APPENDIX A

 Moduli from quark mass matrices
## A.1: Yukawa Tables

Here, $n_{i j}$ takes value 1 , -1 , or 0 depending on the trivalent gradient flow existence and orientation whose details are in [40]. We will assume they all 1 in this local model. $H$ and $v$ explicitly are
(A.1.1)

$$
H_{\phi}=\left\{\begin{array}{ccc}
u_{\phi}^{1} & u_{\phi}^{3} & u_{\phi}^{4} \\
u_{\phi}^{3} & u_{\phi}^{2} & u_{\phi}^{5} \\
u_{\phi}^{4} & u_{\phi}^{5} & -u_{\phi}^{1}-u_{\phi}^{2}
\end{array}\right\}
$$

$$
v_{\phi}=\left\{\begin{array}{c}
v_{\phi}^{1} \\
v_{\phi}^{2} \\
v_{\phi}^{3}
\end{array}\right\}
$$

Table A.1: Up-type Quark terms.

| Term $Q_{i} u_{j}^{c} H_{k}^{u}$ | Coupling $Y_{i j k}^{u}$ |
| :---: | :---: |
| $Q_{1} u_{2}^{c} H_{3}^{u}$ | $\begin{aligned} & n_{12}^{u} \cos \theta_{u} \exp \{ \\ & \left.-\frac{1}{2} \right\rvert\,\left(v_{b}-v_{c}-v_{d}+v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(H_{b}-H_{c}-H_{d}+H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(v_{b}-v_{c}-v_{d}+v_{Y}\right)+ \\ & \left(-v_{b}-v_{c}-v_{d}-4 v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(-H_{b}-H_{c}-H_{d}-4 H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(-v_{b}-v_{c}-v_{d}-4 v_{Y}\right)+ \\ & \left.\left(2 v_{d}+3 v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(2 H_{c}+2 H_{d}+3 H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(2 v_{d}+3 v_{Y}\right) \mid\right\} \end{aligned}$ |
| $Q_{1} u_{3}^{c} H_{2}^{u}$ | $\begin{aligned} & n_{13}^{u} \sin \phi_{u} \sin \theta_{u} \exp \{ \\ & \left.-\frac{1}{2} \right\rvert\,\left(v_{b}-v_{c}-v_{d}+v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(H_{b}-H_{c}-H_{d}+H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(v_{b}-v_{c}-v_{d}+v_{Y}\right)+ \\ & \left(-v_{c}-v_{d}-4 v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(-H_{c}-H_{d}-4 H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(-v_{c}-v_{d}-4 v_{Y}\right)+ \\ & \left.\left(-v_{b}+2 v_{d}+3 v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(-H_{b}+2 H_{c}+2 H_{d}+3 H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(-v_{b}+2 v_{d}+3 v_{Y}\right) \mid\right\} \end{aligned}$ |
| $Q_{2} u_{1}^{c} H_{3}^{u}$ | $\begin{aligned} & n_{21}^{u} \cos \theta_{u} \exp \{ \\ & \left.-\frac{1}{2} \right\rvert\,\left(-v_{b}-v_{c}-v_{d}+v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(-H_{b}-H_{c}-H_{d}+H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(-v_{b}-v_{c}-v_{d}+v_{Y}\right)+ \\ & \left(v_{b}-v_{c}-v_{d}-4 v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(H_{b}-H_{c}-H_{d}-4 H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(v_{b}-v_{c}-v_{d}-4 v_{Y}\right)+ \\ & \left.\left(2 v_{d}+3 v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(2 H_{c}+2 H_{d}+3 H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(2 v_{d}+3 v_{Y}\right) \mid\right\} \\ & \hline \end{aligned}$ |
| $Q_{2} u_{3}^{c} H_{1}^{u}$ | $\begin{aligned} & n_{23}^{u} \cos \phi_{u} \sin \theta_{u} \exp \{ \\ & \left.-\frac{1}{2} \right\rvert\,\left(-v_{b}-v_{c}-v_{d}+v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(-H_{b}-H_{c}-H_{d}+H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(-v_{b}-v_{c}-v_{d}+v_{Y}\right)+ \\ & \left(-v_{c}-v_{d}-4 v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(-H_{c}-H_{d}-4 H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(-v_{c}-v_{d}-4 v_{Y}\right)+ \\ & \left.\left(v_{b}+2 v_{c}+2 v_{d}+3 v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(H_{b}+2 H_{c}+2 H_{d}+3 H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(v_{b}+2 v_{c}+2 v_{d}+3 v_{Y}\right) \mid\right\} \end{aligned}$ |
| $Q_{3} u_{1}^{c} H_{2}^{u}$ | $\begin{aligned} & n_{31}^{u} \sin \phi_{u} \sin \theta_{u} \exp \{ \\ & \left.-\frac{1}{2} \right\rvert\,\left(-v_{c}-v_{d}+v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(-H_{c}-H_{d}+H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(-v_{c}-v_{d}+v_{Y}\right)+ \\ & \left(v_{b}-v_{c}-v_{d}-4 v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(H_{b}-H_{c}-H_{d}-4 H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(v_{b}-v_{c}-v_{d}-4 v_{Y}\right)+ \\ & \left.\left(-v_{b}+2 v_{c}+2 v_{d}+3 v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(-H_{b}+2 H_{c}+2 H_{d}+3 H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(-v_{b} 2 v_{c}+2 v_{d}+3 v_{Y}\right) \mid\right\} \end{aligned}$ |
| $Q_{3} u_{2}^{c} H_{1}^{u}$ | $\begin{aligned} & n_{23}^{u} \cos \phi_{u} \sin \theta_{u} \exp \{ \\ & \left.-\frac{1}{2} \right\rvert\,\left(-v_{c}-v_{d}+v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(-H_{c}-H_{d}+H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(-v_{c}-v_{d}+v_{Y}\right)+ \\ & \left(-v_{b}-v_{c}-v_{d}-4 v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(-H_{b}-H_{c}-H_{d}-4 H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(-v_{b}-v_{c}-v_{d}-4 v_{Y}\right)+ \\ & \left.\left(v_{b}+2 v_{c}+2 v_{d}+3 v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(H_{b}+2 H_{c}+2 H_{d}+3 H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(v_{b}+2 v_{c}+2 v_{d}+3 v_{Y}\right) \mid\right\} \end{aligned}$ |
| $Q_{3} u_{3}^{c} H_{3}^{u}$ | $\begin{aligned} & n_{33}^{u} \cos \theta_{u} \exp \{ \\ & \left.-\frac{1}{2} \right\rvert\,\left(-v_{c}-v_{d}+v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(-H_{c}-H_{d}+H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(-v_{c}-v_{d}+v_{Y}\right)+ \\ & \left(-v_{c}-v_{d}-4 v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(-H_{c}-H_{d}-4 H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(-v_{c}-v_{d}-4 v_{Y}\right)+ \\ & \left.\left(2 v_{c}+2 v_{d}+3 v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(2 H_{c}+2 H_{d}+3 H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(2 v_{c}+2 v_{d}+3 v_{Y}\right) \mid\right\} \end{aligned}$ |
| All else | 0 |

Table A.2: Down-type Quark terms.

| Term $Q_{i} d_{j}^{c} H_{k}^{d}$ | Coupling $Y_{i j k}^{d}$ |
| :---: | :---: |
| $Q_{1} d_{2}^{c} H_{3}^{d}$ | $\begin{aligned} & n_{12}^{d} \cos \theta_{d} \exp \{ \\ & \left.-\frac{1}{2} \right\rvert\,\left(v_{b}-v_{c}-v_{d}+v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(H_{b}-H_{c}-H_{d}+H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(v_{b}-v_{c}-v_{d}+v_{Y}\right)+ \\ & \left(-v_{b}-v_{c}+3 v_{d}+2 v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(-H_{b}-H_{c}+3 H_{d}+2 H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(-v_{b}-v_{c}+3 v_{d}+2 v_{Y}\right)+ \\ & \left.\left(2 v_{c}-2 v_{d}-3 v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(2 H_{c}-2 H_{d}-3 H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(2 v_{c}-2 v_{d}-3 v_{Y}\right) \mid\right\} \\ & \hline \end{aligned}$ |
| $Q_{1} d_{3}^{c} H_{2}^{d}$ | $\begin{aligned} & n_{13}^{d} \sin \phi_{d} \sin \theta_{d} \exp \{ \\ & \left.-\frac{1}{2} \right\rvert\,\left(v_{b}-v_{c}-v_{d}+v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(H_{b}-H_{c}-H_{d}+H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(v_{b}-v_{c}-v_{d}+v_{Y}\right)+ \\ & \left(-v_{c}+3 v_{d}+2 v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(-H_{c}+3 H_{d}+2 H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(-v_{c}+3 v_{d}+2 v_{Y}\right)+ \\ & \left.\left(2 v_{c}-v_{b}-2 v_{d}-3 v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(-H_{b}+2 H_{c}-2 H_{d}-3 H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(2 v_{c}-v_{b}-2 v_{d}-3 v_{Y}\right) \mid\right\} \end{aligned}$ |
| $Q_{2} d_{1}^{c} H_{3}^{d}$ | $\begin{aligned} & n_{21}^{d} \cos \theta_{d} \exp \{ \\ & \left.-\frac{1}{2} \right\rvert\,\left(-v_{b}-v_{c}-v_{d}+v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(-H_{b}-H_{c}-H_{d}+H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(-v_{b}-v_{c}-v_{d}+v_{Y}\right)+ \\ & \left(v_{b}-v_{c}+3 v_{d}+2 v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(H_{b}-H_{c}+3 H_{d}+2 H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(v_{b}-v_{c}+3 v_{d}+2 v_{Y}\right)+ \\ & \left.\left(2 v_{c}-2 v_{d}-3 v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(2 H_{c}-2 H_{d}-3 H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(2 v_{c}-2 v_{d}-3 v_{Y}\right) \mid\right\} \\ & \hline \end{aligned}$ |
| $Q_{2} d_{3}^{c} H_{1}^{d}$ | $n_{23}^{d} \cos \phi_{d} \sin \theta_{d} \exp \{$ $\begin{aligned} & \left.-\frac{1}{2} \right\rvert\,\left(-v_{b}-v_{c}-v_{d}+v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(-H_{b}-H_{c}-H_{d}+H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(-v_{b}-v_{c}-v_{d}+v_{Y}\right)+ \\ & \left(-v_{c}+3 v_{d}+2 v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(-H_{c}+3 H_{d}+2 H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(-v_{c}+3 v_{d}+2 v_{Y}\right)+ \\ & \left.\left(v_{b}+2 v_{c}-2 v_{d}-3 v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(H_{b}+2 H_{c}-2 H_{d}-3 H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(v_{b}+2 v_{c}-2 v_{d}-3 v_{Y}\right) \mid\right\} \end{aligned}$ |
| $Q_{3} d_{1}^{c} H_{2}^{d}$ | $\begin{aligned} & n_{31}^{d} \sin \phi_{d} \sin \theta_{d} \exp \{ \\ & \left.-\frac{1}{2} \right\rvert\,\left(-v_{c}-v_{d}+v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(-H_{c}-H_{d}+H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(-v_{c}-v_{d}+v_{Y}\right)+ \\ & \left(v_{b}-v_{c}+3 v_{d}+2 v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(H_{b}-H_{c}+3 H_{d}+2 H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(v_{b}-v_{c}+3 v_{d}+2 v_{Y}\right)+ \\ & \left.\left(-v_{b}+2 v_{c}-2 v_{d}-3 v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(-H_{b}+2 H_{c}-2 H_{d}-3 H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(-v_{b}+2 v_{c}-2 v_{d}-3 v_{Y}\right) \mid\right\} \end{aligned}$ |
| $Q_{3} d_{2}^{c} H_{1}^{d}$ | $\begin{aligned} & n_{32}^{d} \cos \phi_{d} \sin \theta_{d} \exp \{ \\ & \left.-\frac{1}{2} \right\rvert\,\left(-v_{c}-v_{d}+v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(-H_{c}-H_{d}+H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(-v_{c}-v_{d}+v_{Y}\right)+ \\ & \left(-v_{b}-v_{c}+3 v_{d}+2 v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(-H_{b}-H_{c}+3 H_{d}+2 H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(-v_{b}-v_{c}+3 v_{d}+2 v_{Y}\right)+ \\ & \left.\left(v_{b}+2 v_{c}-2 v_{d}-3 v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(H_{b}+2 H_{c}-2 H_{d}-3 H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(v_{b}+2 v_{c}-2 v_{d}-3 v_{Y}\right) \mid\right\} \end{aligned}$ |
| $Q_{3} d_{3}^{c} H_{3}^{d}$ | $\begin{aligned} & n_{33}^{d} \cos \theta_{d} \exp \{ \\ & \left.-\frac{1}{2} \right\rvert\,\left(-v_{c}-v_{d}+v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(-H_{c}-H_{d}+H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(-v_{d}+v_{Y}\right)+ \\ & \left(-v_{c}+3 v_{d}+2 v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(-H_{c}+3 H_{d}+2 H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(-v_{c}+3 v_{d}+2 v_{Y}\right)+ \\ & \left.\left(2 v_{c}-2 v_{d}-3 v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(2 H_{c}-2 H_{d}-3 H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(2 v_{c}-2 v_{d}-3 v_{Y}\right) \mid\right\} \end{aligned}$ |
| All else | 0 |

Table A.3: Electron-type terms.

| Term $L_{i} e_{j}^{c} H_{k}^{d}$ | Coupling $Y_{i j k}^{l}$ |
| :---: | :---: |
| $L_{1} e_{2}^{c} H_{3}^{d}$ | $\begin{aligned} & n_{12}^{e} \cos \theta_{d} \exp \{ \\ & \left.-\frac{1}{2} \right\rvert\,\left(v_{b}-v_{c}+3 v_{d}-3 v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(H_{b}-H_{c}+3 H_{d}-3 H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(v_{b}-v_{c}+3 v_{d}-3 v_{Y}\right)+ \\ & \left(-v_{b}-v_{c}-v_{d}+6 v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(-H_{b}-H_{c}-H_{d}+6 H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(-v_{b}-v_{c}-v_{d}+6 v_{Y}\right)+ \\ & \left.\left(2 v_{c}-2 v_{d}-3 v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(2 H_{c}-2 H_{d}-3 H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(2 v_{c}-2 v_{d}-3 v_{Y}\right) \mid\right\} \end{aligned}$ |
| $L_{1} e_{3}^{c} H_{2}^{d}$ | $\begin{aligned} & n_{13}^{e} \sin \phi_{d} \sin \theta_{d} \exp \left\{\left.-\frac{1}{2} \right\rvert\,\left(v_{b}-v_{c}+3 v_{d}-3 v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(H_{b}-H_{c}+3 H_{d}-3 H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(v_{b}-v_{c}+3 v_{d}-3 v_{Y}\right)+\right. \\ & \left(-v_{c}-v_{d}+6 v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(-H_{c}-H_{d}+6 H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(-v_{c}-v_{d}+6 v_{Y}\right)+ \\ & \left.\left(-v_{b}+2 v_{c}-2 v_{d}-3 v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(-H_{b}+2 H_{c}-2 H_{d}-3 H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(-v_{b}+2 v_{c}-2 v_{d}-3 v_{Y}\right) \mid\right\} \end{aligned}$ |
| $L_{2} e_{1}^{c} H_{3}^{d}$ | $\begin{aligned} & n_{21}^{e} \cos \theta_{d} \exp \{ \\ & \left.-\frac{1}{2} \right\rvert\,\left(-v_{b}-v_{c}+3 v_{d}-3 v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(-H_{b}-H_{c}+3 H_{d}-3 H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(-v_{b}-v_{c}+3 v_{d}-3 v_{Y}\right)+ \\ & \left(v_{b}-v_{c}-v_{d}+6 v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(H_{b}-H_{c}-H_{d}+6 H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(v_{b}-v_{c}-v_{d}+6 v_{Y}\right)+ \\ & \left.\left(2 v_{c}-2 v_{d}-3 v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(2 H_{c}-2 H_{d}-3 H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(2 v_{c}-2 v_{d}-3 v_{Y}\right) \mid\right\} \end{aligned}$ |
| $L_{2} e_{3}^{c} H_{1}^{d}$ | $\begin{aligned} & n_{23}^{e} \cos \phi_{d} \sin \theta_{d} \exp \{ \\ & \left.-\frac{1}{2} \right\rvert\,\left(-v_{b}-v_{c}+3 v_{d}-3 v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(-H_{b}-H_{c}+3 H_{d}-3 H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(-v_{b}-v_{c}+3 v_{d}-3 v_{Y}\right)+ \\ & \left(-v_{c}-v_{d}+6 v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(-H_{c}-H_{d}+6 H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(-v_{c}-v_{d}+6 v_{Y}\right)+ \\ & \left.\left(v_{b}+2 v_{c}-2 v_{d}-3 v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(H_{b}+2 H_{c}-2 H_{d}-3 H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(v_{b}+2 v_{c}-2 v_{d}-3 v_{Y}\right) \mid\right\} \end{aligned}$ |
| $L_{3} e_{1}^{c} H_{2}^{d}$ | $\begin{aligned} & n_{31}^{e} \sin \phi_{d} \sin \theta_{d} \exp \{ \\ & \left.-\frac{1}{2} \right\rvert\,\left(-v_{c}+3 v_{d}-3 v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(-H_{c}+3 H_{d}-3 H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(-v_{c}+3 v_{d}-3 v_{Y}\right)+ \\ & \left(v_{b}-v_{c}-v_{d}+6 v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(H_{b}-H_{c}-H_{d}+6 H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(v_{b}-v_{c}-v_{d}+6 v_{Y}\right)+ \\ & \left.\left(-v_{b}+2 v_{c}-2 v_{d}-3 v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(-H_{b}+2 H_{c}-2 H_{d}-3 H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(-v_{b}+2 v_{c}-2 v_{d}-3 v_{Y}\right) \mid\right\} \end{aligned}$ |
| $L_{3} e_{2}^{c} H_{1}^{d}$ | $\begin{aligned} & n_{32}^{e} \cos \phi_{d} \sin \theta_{d} \exp \{ \\ & \left.-\frac{1}{2} \right\rvert\,\left(-v_{c}+3 v_{d}-3 v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(-H_{c}+3 H_{d}-3 H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(-v_{c}+3 v_{d}-3 v_{Y}\right)+ \\ & \left(-v_{b}-v_{c}-v_{d}+6 v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(-H_{b}-H_{c}-H_{d}+H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(-v_{b}-v_{c}-v_{d}+6 v_{Y}\right)+ \\ & \left.\left(v_{b}+2 v_{c}-2 v_{d}-3 v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(H_{b}+2 H_{c}-2 H_{d}-3 H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(v_{b}+2 v_{c}-2 v_{d}-3 v_{Y}\right) \mid\right\} \end{aligned}$ |
| $L_{3} e_{3}^{c} H_{3}^{d}$ | $\begin{aligned} & n_{33}^{e} \cos \theta_{d} \exp \{ \\ & \left.-\frac{1}{2} \right\rvert\,\left(-v_{c}+3 v_{d}-3 v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(-H_{c}+3 H_{d}-3 H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(-v_{c}+3 v_{d}-3 v_{Y}\right)+ \\ & \left(-v_{c}-v_{d}+6 v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(-H_{c}-H_{d}+6 H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(-v_{c}-v_{d}+6 v_{Y}\right)+ \\ & \left.\left(2 v_{c}-2 v_{d}-3 v_{Y}\right)^{T}\left(2 H_{c}-2 H_{d}-3 H_{Y}\right)^{-1}\left(2 v_{c}-2 v_{d}-3 v_{Y}\right) \mid\right\} \\ & \hline \end{aligned}$ |
| All else | 0 |

The numerical result for the moduli used in Figure V. 2 is in table A. 4

Table A.4: Tabulated numerical values of Moduli

| Parameter | Value | Parameter | Value |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $H_{b 1,1}$ | 1.75219628381272 | $H_{Y ~ 1,1}$ | 0.470254977486118 |
| $H_{b 1,2}$ | -0.735328652705781 | $H_{Y 1,2}$ | 0.701824648617083 |
| $H_{b 1,3}$ | -0.377020719433746 | $H_{Y ~ 1,3}$ | -1.34973735409641 |
| $H_{b 2,2}$ | 1.19315995302413 | $H_{Y ~ 2,2}$ | 0.641604847709697 |
| $H_{b 2,3}$ | 0.675543994721913 | $H_{Y 2,3}$ | 0.108762493856499 |
| $H_{c 1,1}$ | 1.41562893856031 | $v_{c 1}$ | -0.250519055696569 |
| $H_{c 1,2}$ | 1.05931181064608 | $v_{c 2}$ | -1.4656911323334 |
| $H_{c 1,3}$ | 1.45371284442019 | $v_{c 3}$ | -0.405862359379641 |
| $H_{c 2,2}$ | 0.509312354295455 | $v_{Y 1}$ | -0.417353540440179 |
| $H_{c 2,3}$ | -1.11688627765089 | $v_{Y 2}$ | 0.688596965400472 |
| $H_{d 1,1}$ | -1.13434995566124 | $v_{Y 3}$ | -1.50894939341168 |
| $H_{d 1,2}$ | -0.386481794947734 | $\phi_{1}$ | 0.439157499240369 |
| $H_{d 1,3}$ | -1.34973735409641 | $\theta_{1}$ | -1.37741142245986 |
| $H_{d 2,2}$ | 0.336495907974189 | $\phi_{2}$ | 3.76691301205782 |
| $H_{d 2,3}$ | 2.25852327647213 | $\theta_{2}$ | 6.06985994999668 |
| $\Lambda_{0}$ | 0.907032583667471 | - | - |

## A.2: Table 10 in [38]

| $S U_{3} \times S U_{2} \times U_{1}^{a} \times U_{1}^{b} \times U_{1}^{c} \times U_{1}^{d} \times U_{1}^{Y}$ |  |  |  |  |  |  |  | Location |
| :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: | :---: |
| $Q_{1}$ | 3 | 2 | 1 | 1 | -1 | -1 | 1 | $a+b-c-d+Y=0$ |
| $Q_{2}$ | 3 | 2 | 1 | -1 | -1 | -1 | 1 | $a-b-c-d+Y=0$ |
| $Q_{3}$ | 3 | 2 | -2 | 0 | -1 | -1 | 1 | $-2 a-c-d+Y=0$ |
| $u_{1}^{c}$ | $\overline{3}$ | 1 | 1 | 1 | -1 | -1 | -4 | $a+b-c-d-4 Y=0$ |
| $u_{2}^{c}$ | $\overline{3}$ | 1 | 1 | -1 | -1 | -1 | -4 | $a-b-c-d-4 Y=0$ |
| $u_{3}^{c}$ | $\overline{3}$ | 1 | -2 | 0 | -1 | -1 | -4 | $-2 a-c-d-4 Y=0$ |
| $d_{1}^{c}$ | $\overline{3}$ | 1 | 1 | 1 | -1 | 3 | 2 | $a+b-c+3 d+2 Y=0$ |
| $d_{2}^{c}$ | $\overline{3}$ | 1 | 1 | -1 | -1 | 3 | 2 | $a-b-c+3 d+2 Y=0$ |
| $d_{3}^{c}$ | $\overline{3}$ | 1 | -2 | 0 | -1 |  | 2 | $-2 a-c+3 d+2 Y=0$ |
| $D_{1}$ | 3 | 1 | -1 | -1 | -2 | 2 | -2 | $-a-b-2 c+2 d-2 Y=0$ |
| $D_{2}$ | 3 | 1 | -1 | , | -2 | , | -2 | $-a+b-2 c+2 d-2 Y=0$ |
| $D_{3}$ | 3 | 1 | 2 | 0 | -2 | 2 | -2 | $2 a-2 c+2 d-2 Y=0$ |
| $D_{1}^{c}$ | $\overline{3}$ | 1 | -1 | -1 | -2 | -2 | 2 | $-a-b-2 c-2 d+2 Y=0$ |
| $D_{2}^{c}$ | $\overline{3}$ | 1 | -1 | 1 | -2 | -2 | 2 | $-a+b-2 c-2 d+2 Y=0$ |
| $D_{3}^{c}$ | $\overline{3}$ | 1 | 2 | 0 | -2 | -2 | 2 | $2 a-2 c-2 d+2 Y=0$ |
| $L_{1}$ | 1 | 2 | 1 | 1 | -1 | , | -3 | $a+b-c+3 d-3 Y=0$ |
| $L_{2}$ | 1 | 2 | 1 | -1 | -1 | 3 | -3 | $a-b-c+3 d-3 Y=0$ |
| $L_{3}$ | 1 | 2 | -2 | 0 | -1 | 3 | -3 | $-2 a-c+3 d-3 Y=0$ |
| $H_{1}^{u}$ | 1 | 2 | 1 | , | 2 | 2 | 3 | $a+b+2 c+2 d+3 Y=0$ |
| $H_{2}^{u}$ | 1 | 2 | 1 | -1 | 2 | 2 | 3 | $a-b+2 c+2 d+3 Y=0$ |
| $H_{3}^{u}$ | 1 | 2 | -2 | 0 | 2 | 2 | 3 | $-2 a+2 c+2 d+3 Y=0$ |
| $H_{1}^{d}$ | 1 | 2 | 1 | 1 | 2 | -2 | -3 | $a+b+2 c-2 d-3 Y=0$ |
| $H_{2}^{d}$ | 1 | 2 | 1 | -1 | 2 | -2 | -3 | $a-b+2 c-2 d-3 Y=0$ |
| $H_{3}^{d}$ | 1 | 2 | -2 | 0 | 2 | -2 | -3 | $-2 a+2 c-2 d-3 Y=0$ |
| $e_{1}^{c}$ | 1 | 1 | 1 | 1 | -1 | -1 | 6 | $a+b-c-d+6 Y=0$ |
| $e_{2}^{c}$ | 1 | 1 | 1 | -1 | -1 | -1 | 6 | $a-b-c-d+6 Y=0$ |
| $e_{3}^{c}$ | , | 1 | -2 | 0 | -1 | -1 | 6 | $-2 a-c-d+6 Y=0$ |
| $\nu_{1}^{c}$ | 1 | 1 | 1 |  | -1 | -5 | 0 | $a+b-c-5 d=0$ |
| $\nu_{2}^{c}$ | 1 | 1 | 1 | -1 | -1 | -5 | 0 | $a-b-c-5 d=0$ |
| $\nu_{3}^{c}$ | , | 1 | -2 | 0 | -1 | -5 | 0 | $-2 a-c-5 d=0$ |
| $S_{1}$ | 1 | 1 | -1 | -1 | 4 | 0 | 0 | $-a-b+4 c=0$ |
| $S_{2}$ | 1 | 1 | -1 | 1 |  | - | 0 | $-a+b+4 c=0$ |
| $S_{3}$ | 1 | 1 | 2 |  | 4 | 0 | 0 | $2 a+4 c=0$ |
| $N_{1}$ | 1 | 1 | -3 | 1 | 0 | 0 | 0 | $-3 a+b=0$ |
| $N_{2}$ | 1 | 1 | 0 | -2 | 0 |  | 0 | $-2 b=0$ |
| $N_{3}$ | 1 | 1 | 3 | 1 | 0 | 0 | 0 | $3 a+b=0$ |

Table A.5: Full content of three families from $E_{8}$

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

[1] B. S. Acharya. N=1 heterotic/m-theory duality and joyce manifolds, 1996.
[2] B. S. Acharya. M theory, joyce orbifolds and super yang-mills, 1998.
[3] B S Acharya. M theory, g 2 -manifolds and four-dimensional physics. Classical and Quantum Gravity, 19(22):5619-5653, nov 2002.
[4] B. S. Acharya and B. Spence. Flux, supersymmetry and m theory on 7-manifolds, 2000.
[5] Bobby Acharya and Edward Witten. Chiral fermions from manifolds of $g_{2}$ holonomy. 102001.
[6] Bobby S. Acharya and Konstantin Bobkov. Kahler independence of the g 2-mssm. Journal of High Energy Physics, 2010(9), Sep 2010.
[7] Bobby S. Acharya, Krzysztof Bożek, Miguel Crispim Romão, Stephen F. King, and Chakrit Pongkitivanichkul. Neutrino mass from M Theory SO(10). JHEP, 11:173, 2016.
[8] Bobby Samir Acharya. On Realizing N=1 superYang-Mills in M theory. 2000.
[9] Bobby Samir Acharya, Konstantin Bobkov, Gordon Kane, Piyush Kumar, and Diana Vaman. An M theory Solution to the Hierarchy Problem. Phys. Rev. Lett., 97:191601, 2006.
[10] Bobby Samir Acharya, Konstantin Bobkov, Gordon L. Kane, Piyush Kumar, and Jing Shao. Explaining the Electroweak Scale and Stabilizing Moduli in M Theory. Phys. Rev., D76:126010, 2007.
[11] Bobby Samir Acharya, Konstantin Bobkov, Gordon L. Kane, Jing Shao, and Piyush Kumar. The G(2)-MSSM: An M Theory motivated model of Particle Physics. Phys. Rev., D78:065038, 2008.
[12] Bobby Samir Acharya, Konstantin Bobkov, and Piyush Kumar. An M Theory Solution to the Strong CP Problem and Constraints on the Axiverse. JHEP, 11:105, 2010.
[13] Bobby Samir Acharya and Sergei Gukov. M theory and singularities of exceptional holonomy manifolds. Phys. Rept., 392:121-189, 2004.
[14] Bobby Samir Acharya and Edward Witten. Chiral fermions from manifolds of G(2) holonomy. 2001.
[15] D. Acosta, J. Adelman, T. Affolder, and et al Akimoto. Evidence forbs0 $\rightarrow$ decay and measurements of branching ratio andacpforb $+\rightarrow \mathrm{k}+$. Physical Review Letters, 95(3), Jul 2005.
[16] Evgeny K. Akhmedov, G. C. Branco, and M. N. Rebelo. Seesaw mechanism and structure of neutrino mass matrix. Phys. Lett. B, 478:215-223, 2000.
[17] Pascal Anastasopoulos, M. Bianchi, E. Dudas, and E. Kiritsis. Anomalies, anomalous $\mathrm{U}(1)$ 's and generalized Chern-Simons terms. JHEP, 11:057, 2006.
[18] S. Anderson, V. V. Frolov, Y. Kubota, S. J. Lee, and et al. Poling. Improved upper limits on the flavor-changing neutral current decaysb $\rightarrow \mathrm{k}+\mathrm{andb} \rightarrow \mathrm{k}^{*}(892)+$. Physical Review Letters, 87(18), Oct 2001.
[19] Michael Atiyah and Edward Witten. M theory dynamics on a manifold of G(2) holonomy. Adv. Theor. Math. Phys., 6:1-106, 2003.
[20] K. S. Babu, Borut Bajc, and Shaikh Saad. Yukawa Sector of Minimal SO(10) Unification. JHEP, 02:136, 2017.
[21] Borut Bajc, Junji Hisano, Takumi Kuwahara, and Yuji Omura. Threshold corrections to dimension-six proton decay operators in non-minimal susy su(5) guts. Nuclear Physics B, 910:1-22, 2016.
[22] Igor A. Bandos, José Adolfo de Azcárraga, José Manuel Izquierdo, and Jerzy Lukierski. An action for supergravity interacting with super-p-brane sources. Physical Review D, 65, 2001.
[23] R. Barbier et al. R-parity violating supersymmetry. Phys. Rept., 420:1-202, 2005.
[24] Stephen M. Barr and Ilja Dorsner. A General classification of three neutrino models and U(e3). Nucl. Phys. B, 585:79-104, 2000.
[25] Chris Beasley, Jonathan J. Heckman, and Cumrun Vafa. GUTs and Exceptional Branes in F-theory - II: Experimental Predictions. JHEP, 01:059, 2009.
[26] Chris Beasley and Edward Witten. A Note on fluxes and superpotentials in M theory compactifications on manifolds of $\mathrm{G}(2)$ holonomy. JHEP, 07:046, 2002.
[27] Chris Beasley and Edward Witten. A note on fluxes and superpotentials in m-theory compactifications on manifolds of $g_{2}$ holonomy, 2002.
[28] Chris Beasley and Edward Witten. Residues and world sheet instantons. JHEP, 10:065, 2003.
[29] Katrin Becker, Melanie Becker, Sunny Guha, William D. Linch III, and Daniel Robbins. M-theory potential from the $g_{2}$ hitchin functional in superspace, 2016.
[30] Per Berglund and Andreas Brandhuber. Matter from G(2) manifolds. Nucl. Phys., B641:351-375, 2002.
[31] P. Binétruy. Supersymmetry: Theory, Experiment, and Cosmology. Oxford University Press, 2006.
[32] Chris D.A. Blair, Emanuel Malek, and Jeong-Hyuck Park. M-theory and type iib from a duality manifest action. Journal of High Energy Physics, 2014(1), Jan 2014.
[33] Gianluca Blankenburg, John Ellis, and Gino Isidori. Flavour-changing decays of a 125 gev higgs-like particle. Physics Letters B, 712(4-5):386-390, Jun 2012.
[34] R. Blumenhagen. Basics of f-theory from the type iib perspective. Fortschritte der Physik, 58(7-9):820-826, Mar 2010.
[35] Ralph Blumenhagen, Mirjam Cvetic, and Timo Weigand. Spacetime instanton corrections in 4D string vacua: The Seesaw mechanism for D-Brane models. Nucl. Phys. B, 771:113-142, 2007.
[36] Jacob L. Bourjaily. Geometrically Engineering the Standard Model: Locally Unfolding Three Families out of E(8). Phys. Rev., D76:046004, 2007.
[37] Jacob L. Bourjaily. Local Models in F-Theory and M-Theory with Three Generations. 2009.
[38] Jacob L. Bourjaily. Multiple Unfoldings of Orbifold Singularities: Engineering Geometric Analogies to Unification. Phys. Rev., D79:046005, 2009.
[39] Jacob L. Bourjaily and Sam Espahbodi. Geometrically Engineerable Chiral Matter in M-Theory. 2008.
[40] Andreas P. Braun, Sebastjan Cizel, Max Hübner, and Sakura Schäfer-Nameki. Higgs bundles for M-theory on $G_{2}$-manifolds. JHEP, 03:199, 2019.
[41] Andreas P. Braun and Michele Del Zotto. Mirror Symmetry for $G_{2}$-Manifolds: Twisted Connected Sums and Dual Tops. JHEP, 05:080, 2017.
[42] Andreas P. Braun and Sakura Schäfer-Nameki. Compact, Singular $G_{2}$-Holonomy Manifolds and M/Heterotic/F-Theory Duality. JHEP, 04:126, 2018.
[43] Wilfried Buchmuller, Koichi Hamaguchi, Oleg Lebedev, Saul Ramos-Sanchez, and Michael Ratz. Seesaw neutrinos from the heterotic string. Phys. Rev. Lett., 99:021601, 2007.
[44] Nana Cabo Bizet, Albrecht Klemm, and Daniel Vieira Lopes. Landscaping with fluxes and the E8 Yukawa Point in F-theory. 2014.
[45] P. Candelas, Gary T. Horowitz, Andrew Strominger, and Edward Witten. Vacuum configurations for superstrings. Nuclear Physics B, 258:46-74, 1985.
[46] P. Candelas and D.J. Raine. Compactification and supersymmetry in $d=11$ supergravity, 1984.
[47] J. A. Casas and C. Munoz. A Natural solution to the mu problem. Phys. Lett., B306:288-294, 1993.
[48] Mu-Chun Chen, Michael Ratz, Christian Staudt, and Patrick K. S. Vaudrevange. The mu Term and Neutrino Masses. Nucl. Phys. B, 866:157-176, 2013.
[49] C. Herbert Clemens and Stuart Raby. Right-handed neutrinos and $U(1)_{X}$ symmetrybreaking. 2019.
[50] Jonathan Cohen, Shaouly Bar-Shalom, Gad Eilam, and Amarjit Soni. $R$-parity violating supersymmetry and the 125 GeV Higgs boson signals. Phys. Rev. D, 100(11):115051, 2019.
[51] CMS Collaboration. Search for flavor-changing neutral current interactions of the top quark and higgs boson in final states with two photons in proton-proton collisions at $\sqrt{s}=13$ tev, 112021.
[52] Joseph P. Conlon and Daniel Cremades. The Neutrino Suppression Scale from Large Volumes. Phys. Rev. Lett., 99:041803, 2007.
[53] Alessio Corti, Mark Haskins, Johannes Nordström, and Tommaso Pacini. $G_{2}$-manifolds and associative submanifolds via semi-Fano 3-folds. Duke Math. J., 164(10):1971-2092, 2015.
[54] G. Costa, F. Feruglio, F. Gabbiani, and F. Zwirner. Radiative Generation of Intermediate Mass Scales in Superstring Inspired Models. Nucl. Phys. B, 286:325-348, 1987.
[55] E. Cremmer, B. Julia, and J. Scherk. Supergravity in theory in 11 dimensions. Physics Letters B, 76(4):409-412, 1978.
[56] Asan Damanik. Neutrino Mass Matrix Subject to $\mu-\tau$ Symmetry and Invariant under a Cyclic Permutation. 42010.
[57] Asan Damanik. Neutrino Masses via a Seesaw with Heavy Majorana and Dirac Neutrino Mass Matrices from Discrete Subgroup $\Delta(27)$ of $S U(3)$. In 16th International Seminar on High Energy Physics, 112010.
[58] P. F. de Salas, D. V. Forero, S. Gariazzo, P. Martínez-Miravé, O. Mena, C. A. Ternes, M. Tórtola, and J. W. F. Valle. 2020 global reassessment of the neutrino oscillation picture. JHEP, 02:071, 2021.
[59] P. F. de Salas, D. V. Forero, S. Gariazzo, P. Martínez-Miravé, O. Mena, C. A. Ternes, M. Tórtola, and J. W. F. Valle. 2020 global reassessment of the neutrino oscillation picture, 2020.
[60] Marco Aurelio Diaz. Charged Higgs sector with and without R-parity. In 3rd Warsaw Workshop on Physics from the Planck Scale to the Electroweak Scale, 91997.
[61] Jacques Distler, Daniel S. Freed, and Gregory W. Moore. Orientifold precis, 2010.
[62] Emilian Dudas and Eran Palti. Froggatt-Nielsen models from E(8) in F-theory GUTs. JHEP, 01:127, 2010.
[63] Alan H. Durfee. Fifteen characterizations of rational double points and simple critical points, 1979.
[64] Sebastian A. R. Ellis, Gordon L. Kane, and Bob Zheng. Superpartners at LHC and Future Colliders: Predictions from Constrained Compactified M-Theory. JHEP, 07:081, 2015.
[65] Jarah Evslin. From E(8) to F via T. JHEP, 08:021, 2004.
[66] Marisa Fernández and A. Gray. Riemannian manifolds with structure groupg2, 12 1982.
[67] Anamaria Font. Heterotic strings on $g_{2}$ orbifolds, 2010.
[68] Davide Gaiotto, Gregory W. Moore, and Edward Witten. Algebra of the Infrared: String Field Theoretic Structures in Massive $\mathcal{N}=(2,2)$ Field Theory In Two Dimensions. 2015.
[69] Hadi Godazgar, Mahdi Godazgar, and Malcolm J. Perry. E8 duality and dual gravity. JHEP, 06:044, 2013.
[70] H. S. Goh, R. N. Mohapatra, and Siew-Phang Ng. Minimal SUSY SO(10) model and predictions for neutrino mixings and leptonic CP violation. Phys. Rev. D, 68:115008, 2003.
[71] Eric Gonzalez, Gordon Kane, and Khoa Dang Nguyen. Neutrino mass matrices from localization in m-theory on $G_{2}$ orbifold. Phys. Rev. D, 105:046019, Feb 2022.
[72] Eric Gonzalez, Gordon Kane, Khoa Dang Nguyen, and Malcolm J. Perry. Quark and lepton mass matrices from localization in M-theory on $G_{2}$ orbifold. 22020.
[73] Eric Gonzalez, Gordon Kane, Khoa Dang Nguyen, and Malcolm J. Perry. Quark and lepton mass matrices from localization in m-theory on $G_{2}$ orbifold. Phys. Rev. D, 103:126027, Jun 2021.
[74] Eduardo Gonzalo, Luis E. Ibáñez, and Irene Valenzuela. Ads swampland conjectures and light fermions, 2021.
[75] Michael B. Green and Arnab Rudra. Type i/heterotic duality and m-theory amplitudes, 2016.
[76] Sergey Grigorian. Moduli spaces of g2 manifolds, 2009.
[77] David J. Gross, Jeffrey A. Harvey, Emil Martinec, and Ryan Rohm. Heterotic string. Phys. Rev. Lett., 54:502-505, Feb 1985.
[78] Steven S. Gubser. Tasi lectures: special holonomy in string theory and m-theory, 2002.
[79] Thaisa C. da C. Guio, Hans Jockers, Albrecht Klemm, and Hung-Yu Yeh. Effective action from m-theory on twisted connected sum g 2-manifolds. Communications in Mathematical Physics, 359(2):535-601, Nov 2017.
[80] James Halverson and David R. Morrison. On gauge enhancement and singular limits in $\mathrm{G}_{2}$ compactifications of M-theory. JHEP, 04:100, 2016.
[81] J. A. Harvey and G. Moore. Superpotentials and membrane instantons, 1999.
[82] Jeffrey A. Harvey and Gregory W. Moore. Superpotentials and membrane instantons. 1999.
[83] Reese Harvey and H. Blaine Lawson. Calibrated geometries. Acta Mathematica, 148(none):47-157, 1982.
[84] Petr Horava and Edward Witten. Heterotic and type i string dynamics from eleven dimensions. Nuclear Physics B, 460(3):506-524, Feb 1996.
[85] Thomas House and Andrei Micu. M-theory compactifications on manifolds with g 2 structure. Classical and Quantum Gravity, 22(9):1709-1738, Apr 2005.
[86] Max Hubner. Local $\mathrm{G}_{2}$-manifolds, Higgs bundles and a colored quantum mechanics. JHEP, 05:002, 2021.
[87] Luis E. Ibáñez and Angel M. Uranga. String Theory and Particle Physics: An Introduction to String Phenomenology. Cambridge University Press, 2012.
[88] Clifford V. Johnson. From m-theory to f-theory, with branes. Nuclear Physics B, 507(1-2):227-244, Dec 1997.
[89] Dominic D. Joyce. Compact riemannian 7-manifolds with holonomy $g_{2}$. i, 1996.
[90] Dominic D. Joyce. Compact manifolds with special holonomy, 2000.
[91] Gordon Kane and Martin Wolfgang Winkler. Deriving the Inflaton in Compactified M-theory with a De Sitter Vacuum. Phys. Rev., D100(6):066005, 2019.
[92] Gordon Kane and Martin Wolfgang Winkler. Baryogenesis from a Modulus Dominated Universe. JCAP, 2002(02):019, 2020.
[93] Spiro Karigiannis and Jason D. Lotay. Bryant-salamon $\mathrm{G}_{2}$ manifolds and coassociative fibrations, 2020.
[94] Sheldon Katz and David R. Morrison. Gorenstein Threefold Singularities with Small Resolutions via Invariant Theory for Weyl Groups. J. Alg. Geom., 1:449-530, 1992.
[95] Sheldon H. Katz and Cumrun Vafa. Matter from Geometry. Nucl. Phys., B497:146154, 1997.
[96] Aaron Kennon. $\mathrm{G}_{2}$-Manifolds and M-Theory Compactifications. 2018.
[97] Chris Kolda and Stephen P. Martin. Low-energy supersymmetry withd-term contributions to scalar masses. Physical Review D, 53(7):3871-3883, Apr 1996.
[98] Christopher F. Kolda and Stephen P. Martin. Low-energy supersymmetry with D term contributions to scalar masses. Phys. Rev. D, 53:3871-3883, 1996.
[99] Alexei Kovalev. Twisted Connected Sums and Special Riemannian Holonomy. J. Reine Angew. Math, 565, 2003.
[100] Andre Lukas and Stephen Morris. Kahler potential for m-theory on a $g_{2}$ manifold, 2003.
[101] André Lukas and Stephen Morris. Moduli kähler potential for m theory on ag2manifold. Physical Review D, 69(6), Mar 2004.
[102] Ernest Ma. Dirac Neutrino Mass Matrix and its Link to Freeze-in Dark Matter. Phys. Lett. B, 815:136162, 2021.
[103] Fernando Marchesano, Diego Regalado, and Gianluca Zoccarato. Yukawa hierarchies at the point of $\mathrm{E}_{8}$ in F-theory. JHEP, 04:179, 2015.
[104] R. N. Mohapatra, Abdel Perez-Lorenzana, and Carlos Antonio de Sousa Pires. Type II seesaw and a gauge model for the bimaximal mixing explanation of neutrino puzzles. Phys. Lett. B, 474:355-360, 2000.
[105] Lothar Oberauer, Aldo Ianni, and Ald Serenelli. Solar neutrino physics : the interplay between particle physics and astronomy. Wiley-VCH, 2020.
[106] Hirosi Ooguri and Cumrun Vafa. On the geometry of the string landscape and the swampland. Nuclear Physics B, 766(1-3):21-33, Mar 2007.
[107] Burt A. Ovrut. Lectures on heterotic m-theory, 2002.
[108] Eran Palti. Wavefunctions and the Point of $E_{8}$ in F-theory. JHEP, 07:065, 2012.
[109] Tony Pantev and Martijn Wijnholt. Hitchin's Equations and M-Theory Phenomenology. J. Geom. Phys., 61:1223-1247, 2011.
[110] G. Papadopoulos and P. K. Townsend. Compactification of $\mathrm{D}=11$ supergravity on spaces of exceptional holonomy. Phys. Lett., B357:300-306, 1995.
[111] Joseph Polchinski. String Theory, volume 2 of Cambridge Monographs on Mathematical Physics. Cambridge University Press, 1998.
[112] Miles Reid. The du val singularities an, dn, e6, e7, e8.
[113] Frank Reidegeld. G2-orbifolds with ADE-singularities, 2007.
[114] Werner Rodejohann. Hierarchical matrices in the seesaw mechanism, large neutrino mixing and leptogenesis. Eur. Phys. J. C, 32:235-243, 2004.
[115] Graham Ross and Mario Serna. Unification and fermion mass structure. Phys. Lett., B664:97-102, 2008.
[116] P.J Ruback. The motion of kaluza-klein monopoles, 1986.
[117] Ashoke Sen. A Note on enhanced gauge symmetries in M and string theory. JHEP, 09:001, 1997.
[118] Ashoke Sen. Dynamics of multiple kaluza-klein monopoles in m- and string theory, 1997.
[119] Radu Tatar and Taizan Watari. Proton decay, Yukawa couplings and underlying gauge symmetry in string theory. Nucl. Phys., B747:212-265, 2006.
[120] J. Wess and J. Bagger. Supersymmetry and supergravity. University Press, 1992.
[121] B. [De Wit], D.J. Smit, and N.D. [Hari Dass]. Residual supersymmetry of compactified d $=10$ supergravity, 1987.


[^0]:    ${ }^{1}$ An Einstein manifold is a Riemannian or pseudo-Riemannian manifold whose Ricci tensor is linearly proportional to its metric tensor

[^1]:    ${ }^{2}$ The definition is in Eq. (II.3.15

[^2]:    ${ }^{1}$ Which are in conjugate representations of the gauge group.

[^3]:    ${ }^{2}$ Invariant under rescalings of the background metric (Weyl transformations)
    ${ }^{3}$ When a 1 d string travels in spacetime, it swipes out a 2 d surface called worldsheet
    ${ }^{4}$ Mapping out tachyons that have imaginary mass.
    ${ }^{5}$ See more in [111], volume II.

[^4]:    ${ }^{6}$ Just a differential 2-form. It is called NS-NS because of its origin from left-moving and right-moving closed string states with fermionic fields both following anti-periodic boundary condition, called NeveuSchwartz condition
    ${ }^{7}$ Just a differential 2-form. It is called R-R because of its origin from left-moving and right-moving closed string states with fermionic fields following periodic boundary condition, called Ramond condition
    ${ }^{8}$ Here $B_{i \bar{j}}$ represent the scalar coefficent along harmonic (1,1)-forms of the 6 d internal space

[^5]:    ${ }^{9}$ Topologically a 2 -sphere. This is a compplex plane with one point at infinity to compactify it. So, it is endowed with complex number algebra and division by zero
    ${ }^{10}$ See [87]

[^6]:    ${ }^{11}$ More details in [85]

[^7]:    ${ }^{12}$ More details in [29]

[^8]:    ${ }^{1}$ This decomposition discussion is referenced to [79]. Also See [46, 121, 2, 1, 4, 27].

[^9]:    ${ }^{2}$ More details on root system and deformation are in [94].

[^10]:    ${ }^{1}$ Acharya et al [39] explained that the net number of chiral zero modes was one. So, either $\mathbf{2 7}$ or $\overline{\mathbf{2 7}}$ was a normalizable zero mode, but not both. As a convention, we pick the normalizable zero modes to be in 27.
    ${ }^{2}$ We separate one $U(1)$ factor out to emphasize SM gauge group.

[^11]:    ${ }^{3}$ Equations of motion requires minimal volume, and an associative cycle is a minimal volume cycle.

[^12]:    ${ }^{4}$ Different paths to the same subgroup will lead to the same physics. This is because if there is a diffeomorphism between $X_{1}$ and $X_{2}$ so that their hyper-Kähler structures agree, then they are isometric.

[^13]:    ${ }^{5}$ Details of how to determine $n_{A B C}$ is in [40] and Appendix F of [68]

[^14]:    ${ }^{6}$ [40] gives formulation for the general case, which has been applied to this linear case.

[^15]:    ${ }^{7}$ The GUT group is slightly different, but we assume the magnitude of the couplings are approximately the same. See also [115].
    ${ }^{8}$ Recall that $\mathrm{U}(1)^{a}$ issettozero

[^16]:    ${ }^{9}$ See also [115].

[^17]:    ${ }^{10}$ Study of anomaly involving $S U(2)$ and $S U(3)$ may fix this freedom.

[^18]:    ${ }^{1}$ Morse index is the determinant of the second derivative matrix, i.e Hessian matrix, of $f_{i}$. It is the product of the signatures of directional concavity of $f_{i}$. In our model, the Morse index distinguishes two types of saddle points of $f_{i}$ whose directional concavity signatures are $(+,+,-)$ or $(-,-,+)$, corresponding to morse index -1 and +1 . Due to harmonic nature, $f_{i}$ does not have $(+,+,+)$ and $(-,-,-)$.

[^19]:    ${ }^{2}$ Note that although we can only find one solution in [72], it is likely not unique. Study about the uniqueness of local solution is left for future study.

